



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

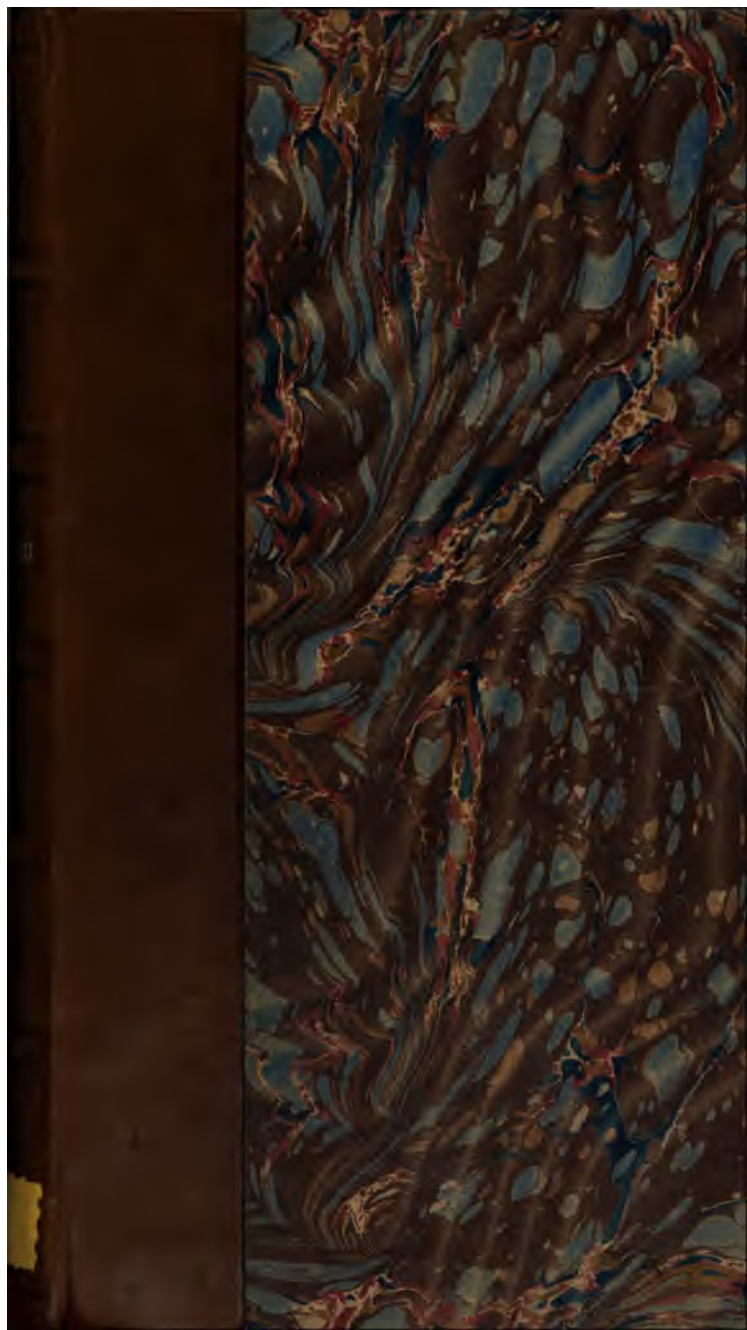
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3/6

9.26.0

BL from last

3078 f. 16

161

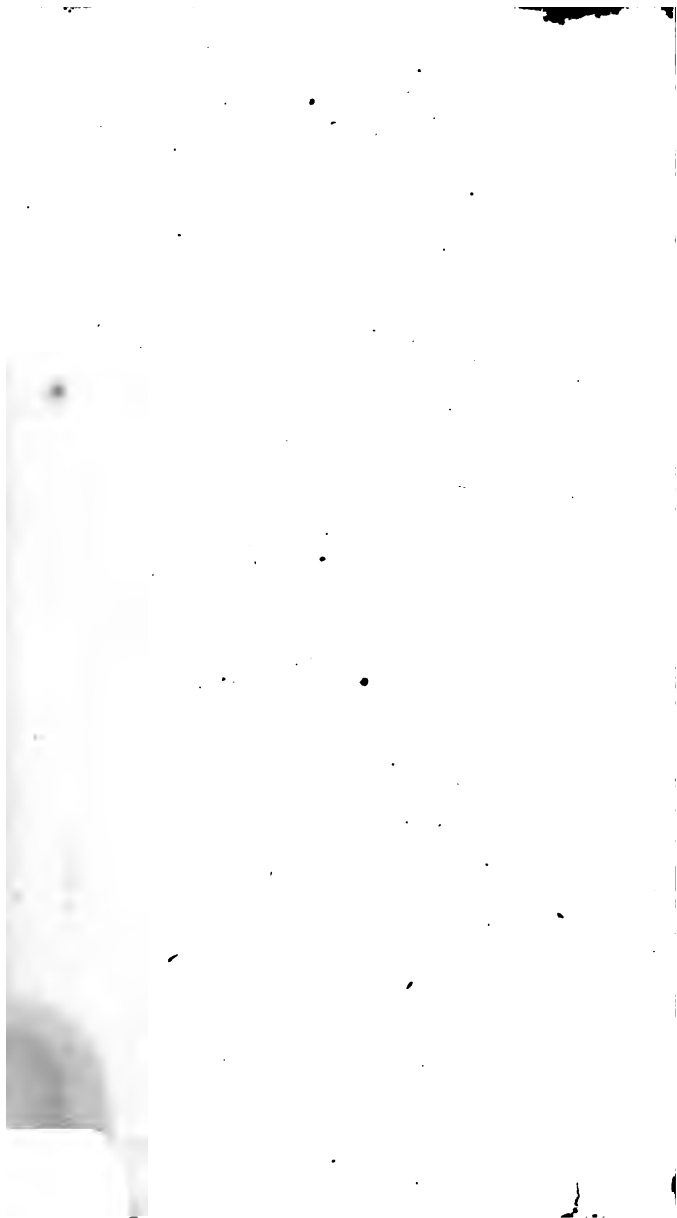


1875

1

1875

1875



The ITALIAN MASTER;

O R,

RULES for the ITALIAN Tongue;

TEACHING TO

READ, WRITE, and SPEAK that
Language in a Month's Time,

By an EASY and FAMILIAR METHOD,
hitherto unpractised:

With COMPOSITIONS or LESSONS
adapted to the RULES;

Also a TABLE of VERBS, by which
all VERBS REGULAR and IRREGULAR,
may be readily conjugated.

By Mr. CHENEAU, of PARIS,
Many Years Professor of Languages in London.

New first Published from the Author's MS. Copy.

E T O N:

Printed by J. POTE, Bookfeller; also for J.
HODGES, Bookfeller near *London-Bridge*, and
JOHN and JAMES RIVINGTON, in *St. Paul's
Church-Yard*.

MDCCLIV.





Advertisement.

IT being my intent to publish my RULES for the FRENCH and ITALIAN Languages at the same time, the Preface I have prefixed to the former, does make it needless for me to add more on this present Publication: The same Instructions and Directions necessary for the Learner in his Studies will be found also in the several Parts of this Book, and the proper Use of these will greatly promote a speedy Knowledge of the Italian Tongue.

IT is for this Reason I shall trouble neither the Reader or myself farther on this Occasion, and tho' from long Experience I am convinced of the Benefit that will accrue to the Learner by following the Rules here laid down, I desire nor pretend to other Merit in preparing these Grammars for the Press, than an honest Intention to assist the diligent Learner, and promote a general Good, by removing the Difficulties that have too long obstructed the Progress of Learning, and a ready and free Communi-

Advertisement.

cation, and Correspondence between the Inhabitants of distant Countries in their respective Languages, and with this view only I now prepare this Plan for the more easy learning the Languages of France and Italy.

NOTwithstanding the Brevity which I at all Times profess, I cannot but observe that the Italian Language will be found to abound with many Beauties and Ornaments of Discourse, and has a peculiar Grace in Expression, in which other Languages may be said to be deficient: It will also be found that the Writers in that Language, especially the Poets, have accustomed themselves to a Freedom in diminishing and enlarging Words at Pleasure: This may at first be thought an Inconvenience, but a little Attention, and Reading the best Authors, under the Direction of an intelligent Master, will soon remove this seeming Difficulty, and a Knowledge of the Italian will be most pleasant and easy to attain in a short Time, especially to every Learner before instructed either in the Latin or French Tongues.

T H E

T H E C O N T E N T S.

I.	T H E Introduction.	Page 1
II.	Of the Pronounciation of Vowells	2
III.	Of the Consonants.	3
IV.	General Observations.	8
V.	Of the Apostrophe.	10
VI.	Of the Accents.	12
VII.	Of Articles.	15
VIII.	Of the Nouns.	16
IX.	Observations on the Nouns.	22
X.	Of Nouns Adjectives.	24
XI.	Of Pronouns.	26
XII.	Of the Auxiliary Verbs <i>Havere</i> to have, and <i>Essere</i> to be.	36
XIII.	Table of the Article <i>il</i> the, &c.	52
XIV.	Rules for the <i>Italian</i> Tongue in five Chapters	53. seq.
XV.	Table of <i>Italian</i> Pronouns.	64
XVI.	Necessary Remarks on the Particles.	109
XVII.	Compositions or Lessons.	111
XVIII.	Significations of Verbs.	163
XIX.	Phrases in Dialogues.	173.
XX.	Months of the Year.	177
XXI.	Days of the Week.	<i>ibid.</i>
XXII.	The Holy Days of the Year.	178
XXIII.	Proper Names of Men, &c.	179
	b	XXV.

vi *The* CONTENTS.

XXIV. Vocabulary of Words.	181.
XXV. Numbers.	184.
XXVI. Table of Regular Verbs.	185
XXVII. Concerning the <i>Italian</i> Verbs.	<i>ibid.</i>
XXVIII. Verbs Regular in <i>are</i> .	187
XXIX. Verbs Regular in <i>ere</i> .	191
XXX. Verbs Regular in <i>ire</i> .	193
XXI. Of Verbs Passive, Reciprocal, and Neuter..	196
XXXII. Of Verbs Irregular.	198
XXXIII. Verbs Irregular in <i>are</i>	200
XXXIV. Verbs Irregular in <i>ere</i> .	204
XXXV. Verbs Irregular in <i>ire</i> .	244
XXXVI. Necessary Observations on the Conjugations of Verbs.	250
XXVII. Example of <i>Italian</i> Poetry.	252
	A N

E R R A T A.

PAGE 10, Line 16, read *with a Vowel or the*.
 p. 11, l. 23, read *to me it*. p. 13, l. 3. read *be loved*.
 p. 18, l. 6. read *li podesti*, p. 24, l. 30, read *than*. p. 26.
 l. 1, read *learnedly*. l. 2, *richly*. p. 29, l. 24, read *to her*
it. p. 39, l. 7, for *Active*, read *Passive*. p. 91, l. 22, for
fasco read *fasco*. p. 218, dele the Verb *Giungere to join*,
 and decline it like *to distinguish*, p. 214.

A N

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

Italian Tongue.

THE *Italian* Tongue has only Twenty Letters.

	Pronounce	
A		A
B		be
C		ce
D		de
E		e
F		ef
G		ge
H		ash
I		i
L		el
M		em
N		en
O		o
P		pe
Q		qu
R		er
S		es
T		te
U		u
Z		zeta

B

Of

Of these, Five are Vowels.

A. E. I. O. U.

The Others are Consonants.

Note. K. X. Y. are not Letters of the *Italian* Tongue ; except the Letter *X* in *Xantho*, a Man's Name, to distinguish it from *Santo*, holy. Also the Letters *J* and *V* Consonant; though sometimes used; are not reckoned in the *Italian* Alphabet.

Of the Pronunciation of the VOWELS.

I. *A*, is sounded broad like *aw* in *English*, as, *Panc*, Bread, say, *Pawne*.

II. *E*, is pronounced like the *English* *e*, when by itself.

III. *I*, is pronounced like *ee* in *English*, as, *minimo* the least, say, *meénimo*.

IV. *O*, has two different sounds.

1. The Letter *O* sounds *open*, that is, strong and clear, as in the *English* words *dore*, *store*; and this is the most general use of this Letter, except in words that correspond with the following Rules, when *O* is pronounced *close*, that is, more soft, or like *U* in *turret*, *stumble*.

2. *O* is *close*, that is, sounded more soft when accented, in words ending in *ore*, *ora*, *ore*, *oro*, *oso*; as, *oratióne* prayer, *qual-hóra* sometimes, *Sigñóre* Sir, *colóro* those, *amoróso* amorous.

[3]

O is pronounced close before *l, m, n, r*; as, *cólmo* topfull, pronounce *culma*; *pónta* a point, say *punta*; *Róma* Rome, say *Ruma*: Also, before *gn* the *o* is close; as, *Bológna* Bologna, say *Bolunnia*.

O, after *i* and *u*, sounds open or strong; as, *chióma* a head of hair, *cuóre* a heart, say *chóma*, *córe*.

Except from this last Rule *duo, tuo, suo, vir-tuoso*; in which words the *u* is pronounced as double *oo*, by reason the *u* and *o* make two syllables, *du-o, tu-o, &c.*

V. U, Vowel, is pronounced like *Oo* in *English*; as, *Lúna* the moon, read *Lóona*: Note that, *u* before another Vowel, beginning a word, becomes a Consonant, and is pronounced as in *English*; as, *vestro* yours, *vitio* vice, &c.

Uu, between Vowels, is pronounced as a single *u*; as, *auvenire* to happen, say *avenire*.

Of the CONSONANTS.

THE Consonants that differ most from the *English* Pronunciation, are *C. G. Z.* to these may be added *H. S. T.*

C.

C, before the Vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced like *K* in *English*; as, *casa* a house, say *kasa*; *collo* a neck, say *kollo*; *cura* care, say *kura*.

Also, *C*, when double, or before the letter *h*, is pronounced strong ; as, *vacca* a cow, say *vakka* ; *spéechi* looking-glasses, say *spékky*.

C, before *e* and *i*, sounds like *che*, *chi*, as in the *English* words, *Cherry*, *Children* ; as, *céna* a supper, say *chéna* ; *Cesare* *Cesar*, say *Chesare* ; *città* a city, say *chittà*.

Cc, before *e* and *i*, the first is pronounced like unto *T* softly ; as, *accento* an accent, say *atchento* ; *braccio* an arm, say *bratchio*.

G.

G, before the Vowels *a*, *e*, *u*, is pronounced as in *English*.

G, before the Vowels *e* or *i*, is pronounced like the *English* Consonant *j* ; as, *género* a son-in-law, say *jenero* ; *gelo* frost, say *jelo*. If *g* comes between either of these Vowels, it is pronounced as if *d* was before it ; as, *vigilante* watchful, say *vidgilante*.

Gg, before *e* or *i*, the first *g* is pronounced as *d*, and the latter as *g* ; as, *oggetto* an object, say *odgetto* ; *oggi* to-day, say *odgi*.

G, before *l*, sounds also like *t* ; as, *figlio* a son, say *fillio* : Except in these words, *Inglese*, *negligenza*, *negletto*, *globo*, *conglutinare*, in which words *g* sounds like as in *English*.

G, before *n*, is sounded like another *n*, and the sound of the letter *i* follows after the last *n* ; as, *agnallo* a lamb, say *anniello* ; *regno* a kingdom, say *rennie*.

The

[5]

The syllables *gua*, *gue*, *gui*, are pronounced *ga*, *ge*, *gi*, or rather, *gwa*, *gwe*, *gwi*.

The syllables *ghe*, *ghi*, are pronounced *gue*, *gui* ; as, *bottéghe* shops, say *bottégue* ; *luoghi* places, say *luogui*.

Z.

Z, as well single as double, is generally pronounced like *Ts* ; as, *zío* an uncle, say *tio* ; *zóppo* lame, say *tsoppo* ; *bellézza* beauty, say *bellétfa* ; *faxzoletta* a handkerchief, say *fatfoletta* ; *nozze* a wedding, say *notse* ; *diligenza* diligence, say *diligentfa* ; *forza* strength, say *fortsa*. And *note*, that in pronouncing these words, a small rest is to be made on the *t* before the *s*.

Z is pronounced like *ds*, in words which in *English* and *Latin* are wrote with a Z ; as, *Lazaro* Lazarus, say *Ladsaro* ; *zona* a zone, say *dsona* ; *gazetta* a gazette, say *gadsetta* ; *mizo* the middle, say *midso* ; *azzurro* blue, say *adsuro*.

H.

The letter *H* is neither aspirated, nor pronounced in the beginning of words ; as, *Hora* an hour ; *ho* I have ; *humano* human ;. read *ora*, *ò*, *omano*.

S.

The letter *S*, in the beginning of words, is pronounced as in *English* ; as, *Salute* health, *servo* a servant, *sopra* upon.

S, before *c, f, p, t*, keeps its natural sound ; as, *scalà* a ladder, *véspe* a wasp, *stúdio* study.

S, before *d, g, l, m, n, r, u*, is pronounced like *z* ; as, *sdegno* disdain, read *zdegno* ; *sguardo* a look, read *zguardo* ; *smánia* madness, read *zmánia*, &c.

S, between two Vowels, is pronounced also like *z* ; as, *mísero* miserable, say *mízero* ; *desío* a desire, say *dezío* ; *casa* a house, say *caza* ; *uso* used, say *uzo*. Except *S* in *così* so, which is pronounced *cofsi*. *Sa*, in these two words only, *cosa* a thing, and *rosa* gnawed, is pronounced in like manner.

Si, when added to other words, keeps its natural sound ; as, *scrivesi* they write, *parlasi* they say, &c.

T.

T, before *ia, ie, ii, io*, in the middle or ending of words, is pronounced *ts* ; as *gratia* grace, say *gratsia* ; *natione* a nation, say *natsione* ; *vitii* vices, say *vitfi* ; *otio* idleness, say *ótsio*.

Except, in the words following, *ambastia* extasy, *saettia* a pinnacle, *malatia* sickness, *questiòne* a question, *moléstia* trouble ; the letter *s* preceeding the letter *t* : Also in *tiène* he holdeth, *potiáte* ye may be able, *patiámo* we may suffer, *patiáte* ye may suffer ; and some other Verbs which will be learnt by practice.

Note. The other Consonants *b. d. f. l. m. n. p. r.* are pronounced as in *English* : Instead of *k*, the *Italians* use *ch* ; and instead of *ph*, the letter *f*.

For

For the Learner's more ready improvement, let him attend to the following Recapitulation of the *Italian Pronunciation*.

		<i>Example.</i>	
<i>Ce</i>	read	<i>che</i>	<i>cena</i> chena
<i>ci</i>		<i>chi</i>	<i>città</i> chittà
<i>cia</i>		<i>chia</i>	<i>ciascuno</i> chiascuno
<i>cie</i>		<i>chie</i>	<i>cielo</i> chielo
<i>cio</i>		<i>chio</i>	<i>bacio</i> batchio
<i>ge</i>		<i>dge</i>	<i>genio</i> dgenio
<i>gi</i>		<i>dgi</i>	<i>giro</i> dgiro
<i>gia</i>		<i>ja</i>	<i>giardino</i> jardino
<i>gie</i>		<i>je</i>	<i>Giesu</i> jefu
<i>gio</i>		<i>jo</i>	<i>giove</i> jove
<i>giu</i>		<i>joo</i>	<i>giusto</i> joosto
<i>gli</i>		<i>lli</i>	<i>pigliare</i> pilliare
<i>gna, gne, &c.</i>		<i>nnia, nnie,</i>	<i>regnare</i> renniare
<i>chei</i>		<i>ke</i>	<i>che</i> ke
<i>chi</i>		<i>ki</i>	<i>chi</i> ki
<i>fce</i>		<i>she</i>	<i>scemare</i> shemare
<i>fci</i>		<i>shi</i>	<i>lasciare</i> lashiare
<i>ti</i>		<i>tfi</i>	<i>nazione</i> natsione
<i>u</i>		<i>oo</i>	<i>Virtù</i> Virtoo
<i>u</i> before <i>o</i> ,		<i>o</i>	<i>buono</i> bono
<i>vv</i>		<i>v</i>	<i>avvenire</i> avenire
<i>z</i> }		<i>tf</i>	<i>diligenza</i> diligentsa
		<i>or df }</i>	<i>zefiro</i> dsefiro

Observe always to rest on the pronunciation of the Vowels accented thus, *tà, virtù, città, amò, amerò, amerà, credè, sentì, crederà, sentirà.*

Nota.

Note. By these Examples it may be seen, that the *Italian* Tongue does not so greatly differ in pronunciation from the *English*; but, notwithstanding this, it may at all times be most proper to attend to the instructions of an able Master, as every language has some peculiar expressions which are better learnt by the ear, than by any written Rules.

General OBSERVATIONS.

I. **T**HE *Italian* Tongue differs in this from the *French*, that all words are written after the same manner they are pronounced.

II. That the Consonants in the beginning of compound words are doubled, as, *ab-battere*, *ap-pogiare*, *ap-presso*, *dis-ficile*, *of-fendere*, &c.

III. The letter *g* is doubled, when followed by *ia* and *io*, and make together but one syllable; as, *Loggia* a lodge, *Maggio* May: But if the Vowels *ia* and *io* be divided or pronounced distinct, the *g* is not doubled; as, *agio* easy, *privilegio* privilege, *malvagio* bad.

The letter *g* is also doubled in the infinitive mood of verbs, and in those tenses where a vowel comes before *gere*; as, *leggere* to read, *reggere* to govern; other wise the *g* remains single; as, *pingere* to feign, *pingere* to paint, &c.

IV. All words that begin in *English* with any consonant, as, *Jesus*, *Joseph*, *Journal*, are by the *Italians* wrote by *G*; as, *Giesu*, *Giosèppe*, *Giornale*.

V. That

V. That the Vowels *E*, *O*, and *I*, are not pronounced when they follow the letters *l*, *n*, *r*, and for the most part not expressed in writing, unless they end the sentence ; as,

Bel tempo fà, it is fair weather, not *bello*.

Di buon ingégno, of a good wit, not *buono*.

Un mal non vien sólo, a mischief comes not alone, not *uno male*.

Huomin' da bene, honest men, not *huomini*.

Also sometimes when they follow *t*, *d*, or *m* ; as,

Fra Bernardo, Brother Bernard, not *Frate*.

Gran Saggétto, an eminent man, not *grande*, &c.

Note. To this Rule there are some exceptions in the words *Animo* the mind, *Regno* a kingdom, *Apollo* the God *Apollo*, and some others ; as, *Apollo siede nel trono*, Apollo sitteth on the throne, not *Apol siede*, &c.

VI. Words beginning with *S*, require the preceeding word to end with a Vowel ; as, *grande stato*, *quello spirito*, *essere stato*, for *gran stato*, *quel spirito*, *esser stato*.

VII. Words of the infinitive mood are not cut off at the end, though a Vowel follows ; as, *parlare alto* to speak aloud, not *parlar alto* : And note the final Vowels of words are always to be pronounced very soft ; also, that the *Italian* Poets take great liberty in retrenching or cutting off words at their pleasure, which will be readily observed by reading the best Authors.

Of

Of the APOSTROPHE.

THE *Apostrophe* is expressed in this wise (') whereby in speaking and writing it is shewn, that a Vowel is cut off or left out for the more quick pronunciation. It is generally put after articles ending in a Vowel, the next word beginning with another Vowel, or the letter *h*; as, *l' animo, l' usanza, l' honore.*

Note. The *i* of the article *il* is apostroph'd, or cut off after words ending with a Vowel, and not the Vowel of that word; as,

Ditemi 'l vostro nome, for *ditemi il vostro nome,*
tell me your name.

Tutto 'l mondo sà, for *tutto il mondo sà,* every
body knows.

The pronoun *che* is abbreviated before words beginning with the letter *h*, in this wise; viz. *che havete,* read *c' havete.*

Mi, ti, ci, si, vi, di, da, ne, are apostroph'd before Vowels, or the letter *h*; as,

M' intendi? do you understand me? for *mi intendi.*

T' intendo, I do understand you, for *ti intendo.*

S' intende, it is understood, for *si intende,* &c.

Note. The following Examples will explain the nature of these abbreviations or contractions more fully to the learner.

Al, for, *a il,* to the.

Ai, a', for, *alli,* to the.

Bei, be', for, *belli,* fair, beautiful.

Bell' amante, for, *bello amante,* a fair lover.

Ch',

Ch', for, *che*, that, or which.
Coi, co', for, *con li* or *con gli*, with the.
Colla, for, *con la*, with the.
Colle, for, *con le*, with the.
D', for *di*, of.
Del, for *di il*, of the.
De', *dei*, for *delli* or *degli*, of the, pl.
Ei, e', for *egli*, he, or, it.
E'l, for *è il*, and it, and the.
Fra', for, *fra li*, among the.
Fé, for *fece*, he did, or, made.
Fè, for *fede*, faith.
Foss' *Io*, for, *fossi Io*, were I.
Gl', for, *gli*, the.
Huomin' da bene, for *buomini da bene*, honest men.
Huomin' ingrati, for *buomini ingrati*, ungrateful men.
Lo' mperatore, for, *lo Imperatore*, the Emperor.
Lo' nventore, for, *lo inventore*, the inventor.
Madonna, for, *mia donna*, my woman.
Madonna, the Virgin Mary.
Me' for *meglio*, better.
Me'l, for *a me il*, to meet it.
Mie', for *miei*, mine.
Molt' anni, for *molto anni*, many years.
Nel, for, *in li*, in the.
Ne'l, for, *ne il*, nor the, or, for it.
No'l, for, *non il*, not the.
Nollo, for, *non lo*, not the.
Pel, for, *per il*, or *per lo*, or the, or through the.
Pel, for, *per lo*, idem.
Puo, for *puoi*, thou canst.
Quai, for *quali*, which.
Quei, for *quelli*, those
Quand' il, for *quando il*, when the.

Sant,

Sant' Antonio, for *Santo Antonio*.

Suo', for *suoi*, his.

Se', for *sei*, thou art.

Se'l, for, *a se il*, to himself it, or, if it.

Su'l, for, *sopra il*, upon the.

Tra', for *tra li*, among the.

Te'l, for *a te il*, to thee; it.

Tuo', for *tui*, thine.

Tu'l, for *tu il*, thou it.

Tra'l, for, *tra il*, betwixt the.

Of the ACCENTS.

THE *Italians* have two Accents, which denote the syllables to be pronounced long or short, as in other languages.

The one *Grave* [`] the other *Acute* ['] expressed each by these opposite marks.

Nouns ending in *tà* in *Italian*, which are generally derived from *tas* in the *Latin*, have a *Grave* Accent; as, *purità*, *castità*, *maestà*, &c. And note, the plural of these words do not change, but end in *tà* also; except *visita*, which is not accented, and makes its plural *visite*.

Nouns derived from the *Latin* in *us*, and end in *Italian* in *u*, have a *Grave* Accent; as, *virtus*, *la virtù*, *le virtù*, &c.

The *Grave* Accent is put to the end of verbs of the first and third person of the Future Tense; as, *canterò* I shall sing, *canterà* he will sing. It is also used on Verbs of one syllable, ending in *o* and *a*, and other words, as may be seen by the following,

lowing, which are always expressed by a *Grave* Accent.

<i>Amò</i> , I love. He loves	<i>Nè</i> , neither, or nor.
<i>Ciò</i> , that.	<i>Nò</i> , not.
<i>Così</i> , there.	<i>ò</i> , or.
<i>Così</i> , thither.	<i>Oibò</i> , fie. x
<i>Dà</i> , he giveth.	<i>Perchè</i> ? because, why,
<i>Dà</i> , I give.	or wherefore.
<i>Dì</i> , a day.	<i>Perciò</i> , wherefore.
<i>è</i> , is.	<i>Però</i> , therefore, yet. x
<i>Euròpa</i> , Europe.	<i>Più</i> , more.
<i>Eufràte</i> , Euphrates.	<i>Piè</i> , a foot, or feet.
<i>Fà</i> , he doth, or makes.	<i>Podestà</i> , a Governor. x
<i>Fò</i> , I do, or make.	<i>Può</i> , he can, or is a-
<i>Fù</i> , hath been.	ble.
<i>Frà</i> , betwixt, also a	<i>Quà</i> , hither.
x contract, or abbrevi-	<i>Qui</i> , here.
ation, of <i>Fràte</i> a	<i>Rè</i> , a King, or Kings.
Fryer.	<i>Stà</i> , he stands, dwells,
<i>Già</i> , formerly, or now.	or is.
<i>Giesù</i> , Jesus.	<i>Stò</i> , I stand, or am, or
<i>Grù</i> , a crane.	dwel.
<i>Giù</i> , down, below.	<i>Sà</i> , he knows.
<i>Hà</i> , he hath.	<i>Sè</i> , himself.
<i>Hò</i> , I have.	<i>Sì</i> , yes.
<i>Honestà</i> , honesty.	<i>Sò</i> , I know.
<i>Horsù</i> , come away.	<i>Sù</i> , up.
<i>Fuggiro</i> , they fled, for	<i>Tè</i> , thee.
<i>fuggirono</i> .	<i>Trà</i> , betwixt.
<i>Là</i> , there, thither.	<i>Trè</i> , three.
<i>Lì</i> , there, or here.	<i>Tò</i> , for <i>togli</i> , take thou,
<i>Mà</i> , but.	also mark, or ob-
<i>Mò</i> , presently.	serve.

Tù, thou.
 Và, he goeth.
 Vò, I go.

$\left. \begin{array}{l} Viè, \\ Vià, \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{more : pro-} \\ \text{nounced in} \\ \text{one found.} \end{array}$

Note, 1. When the Pronoun is put after the Verb, no Accent is used ; as, *farollo*, for *lo farò* I shall do it ; *mostrammi*, for *mi mostrò* he will shew me.

2. When the first person of the Definite Tense ends with two Vowels, the third person of the same tense is accented, but not otherwise ; as, *amò* he loved, *credè* he believed, the first persons of which are *amai*, *credei*. For this reason, *vinse*, *prese*, are not accented, making in the first person *vinfi*, *presi*.

The *Acute Accent* is used on the last syllable but one of words ending in *ia* and *io* ; as, *pazzia* folly, *profezia* prophecy, *desio* desire, &c. And also on words that have a double signification ; as, *tenere* to hold, is by the Accent distinguished from *tenere* tender ; *ancora* still, from *ancora* an anchor,

Note. This Rule is attended with so many uncertainties, that it is difficult to give certain Examples for the Reader's instruction ; Practice in reading, and a good Master, will be the best guide.

of

Of ARTICLES.

THE Articles will be found to be fully explained in the following RULES ; yet it may not be improper to give the Learner here an Example of their Declensions.

The Definite Article *Il.* or *Lo.* the *or* a, Masculine. *La* the *or* a, Feminine.

Sing. Nom. *Il.* the, or a.
 Gen. *del.* of the, or of a.
 Dat. *al.* to the, or to a.
 Acc. *il.* the, or a.
 Voc. *o.* o.
 Abl. *dal.* from the, or from a.

Plur. Nom. *i.* or *li.* the.
 Gen. *dei.* or *delli.* of the.
 Dat. *ai* or *alli* to the.
 Acc. *i* or *li* the.
 Voc. *o.* o.
 Abl. *dai* or *dalli* from the.

Sing. Nom. *lo.* the, or a.
 Gen. *dello.* of the, or of a.
 Dat. *allo.* to the, or to a.
 Acc. *lo.* the, or a.
 Voc. *o.* o.
 Abl. *dallo.* from the, or from a.

Plur. Nom. *gli.* the.
 Gen. *degli.* of the.
 Dat. *agli.* to the.
 Acc. *gli.* the.
 Voc. *o.* o.
 Abl. *dagli.* from the.

Sing. Nom. *la*. the, or a.
 Gen. *della*. of the, or of a.
 Dat. *alla*. to the, or to a.
 Acc. *la*. the, or a.
 Voc. *o*. o.
 Abl. *dalla*. from the, or from a.

Plur. Nom. *le*. the.
 Gen. *delle*. of the.
 Dat. *alle*. to the.
 Acc. *le*. the.
 Voc. *o*. o.
 Abl. *dalle*. from the.

The Articles *il*, and *lo*, Singular, with their Plurals *i*, *li*, and *gli*, serve to the Masculine Gender, and *la* Sing. *le* Plural to the Feminine.

Of the NOUNS.

THE Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue do not vary their Cases, but like to the *English* and *French*, their Cases are distinguished by the Article only ; and the Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue terminate or end in one of the Vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*.

I shall give an Example of the Declension of Nouns, with the Articles, as in the foregoing Chapter, according to their Terminations.

I. NOUNS

I. NOUNS ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender, and make their Plural in *e*.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>la Casa</i>	the House.
Gen.	<i>della Casa,</i>	of the House.
Dat.	<i>alla Casa,</i>	to the House.
Acc.	<i>la Casa,</i>	the House.
Voc.	<i>O Casa,</i>	O House.
Abl.	<i>dalla Casa,</i>	from the House.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le Case,</i>	the Houses.
Gen.	<i>delle Case,</i>	of the Houses.
Dat.	<i>alle Case,</i>	to the Houses.
Acc.	<i>le Case,</i>	the Houses.
Voc.	<i>O Case,</i>	O Houses.
Abl.	<i>dalle Case,</i>	from the Houses.

NOUNS of this Gender, beginning with a Vowel, make the Article apostrophed in this wise :

Sing.	Nom.	<i>l' ànima,</i>	a soul.
	Gen.	<i>dell' ànima,</i>	of a soul.
	Dat.	<i>all' ànima,</i>	to a soul, &c.

Note. 1. Nouns ending in *ca* and *ga*, introduce *h* in the Plural Number before the last Vowel, in order to soften the Pronunciation ; as, *la manica* a sleeve, *le maniche* Plur. *la piaga* a wound, *le piaghe* Plur.

2. Nouns ending in *ty* in *English*, and in *Italian* in *tà* accented, make their Termination alike in both Numbers, Singular and Plural ; as, Chastity,

la castità, le castità Plur. Purity, *la purità, le purità* Plur.

3. Nouns of this Termination in *a*, being Names of Offices or Dignity, are Masculine, and make their Plural in *i*; as, *il profeta* a Prophet, *li profeti* Plur. *il podestà* a Governor, makes *li podestà* Plur. *il papa* a Pope, *i papi* Plur.

II. Nouns ending in *e*, both Masculine and Feminine, Substantives and Adjectives, make their Plural in *i*.

Masculine Gender, Singular.

Nom.	<i>il Padre,</i>	a Father.
Gen.	<i>del Padre,</i>	of a Father.
Dat.	<i>al Padre,</i>	to a Father.
Acc.	<i>il Padre,</i>	a Father,
Voc.	<i>O Padre,</i>	O Father.
Abl.	<i>dal Padre,</i>	from a Father.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>i Padri,</i>	the Fathers.
Gen.	<i>dei Padri,</i>	of the Fathers.
Dat.	<i>ai Padri,</i>	to the Fathers.
Acc.	<i>i Padri,</i>	the Fathers.
Voc.	<i>O Padri,</i>	O Fathers.
Abl.	<i>da i Padri,</i>	from the Fathers.

Feminine Gender, Singular:

Nom.	<i>la Madre,</i>	a Mother.
Gen.	<i>della Madre,</i>	of a Mother.
Dat.	<i>alla Madre,</i>	to a Mother.
Acc.	<i>la Madre,</i>	a Mother.
Voc.	<i>O Madre,</i>	O Mother.
Abl.	<i>dalla Madre,</i>	from a Mother.

Plural.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le Madri,</i>	the Mothers.
Gen.	<i>delle Madri,</i>	of the Mothers.
Dat.	<i>alle Madri,</i>	to the Mothers.
Acc.	<i>le Madri,</i>	the Mothers.
Voc.	<i>O Madri,</i>	O Mothers.
Abl.	<i>dalle Madri,</i>	from the Mothers.

Exception to this Rule, *il Rè* a King makes *i Rè* in the Plural ; as do also, *la Specie* a Figure, *le Specie* ; *la Superficie* the Superficies, *le Superficie* ; *l' Effegie* the Effigies, *le Effegie* ; *la Temperie* the Season, *le Temperie*, and some others.

Bue an Ox makes *Buoi* in the Plural, *Moglia* a Wife makes *Mogli*, *Mille* a Thousand makes *Mila* Plural.

Note. I. Nouns which end in *me*, are of the Masculine Gender ; as, *il Fiume* a River, *il Verme* a Worm ; except two only, *la Speme* Hope, *la Fame* Hunger.

II. All Nouns ending in *ore*, are of the Masculine Gender ; as, *il Cuore* the Heart, *il Calore* Heat, &c. Also Nouns ending in *re* and *nte*, except a few of each Termination ; as, *la Madre* a Mother, *la Torre* a Tower, *la Polvere* Dust, *la Febre* a Fever, which are of the Feminine Gender. In *nte*, there are but two Nouns of the Feminine Gender, viz. *la Gente* a Nation, *la Mente* the Mind.

Also the *Italians* say *il* and *la Fante* a Man or Woman Servant, *il* and *la Fronte* the Forehead ; and the Variation of the Gender in other Nouns is generally as in *Latin*, and will be found in the Dictionary, and readily occur by Practice.

The

The Nouns following are Feminine, and have no Singular Number ; as, *Nozze* a Wedding, *Esequie* Funeral, *Minacce* Threatnings, *Spezie* Drugs.

III. Nouns ending in *i* are but fifteen in Number, and do not change in the Plural, but are only distinguished by their Article, whether they be simple Substantives, or the Names of Men or Cities.

Example.	<i>il Dì</i>	the Day,	Plural.	<i>i Dì.</i>
	<i>il Lunedì</i>	Monday,		<i>i Lunedì.</i>
	<i>la Diocesi</i>	a Diocess,		<i>le Diocesi.</i>
	<i>la Iri</i>	the Rainbow,		<i>le Iri.</i>
	<i>Giovanni</i>	John,		<i>Giovanni.</i>
	<i>Parigi</i>	Paris,		<i>Parigi.</i>
	<i>Napoli</i>	Naples,		<i>Napoli, &c.</i>

Nouns of Number also end in *i* ; as, *Dieci* Ten, *Undici* Eleven, *Vinti* Twenty.

IV. Nouns ending in *o* are all of the Masculine Gender, except *la Mano* a Hand, and make their Plural in *i* ; as, *il Fratello* a Brother, *i Fratelli* Brothers ; *la Mano* a Hand, *le Mani* Hands. *Uomo* a Man, makes *Uomini* in the Plural.

Note. Some Substantives in *o*, for the greater Elegance, make their Plural in *a* rather than in *i*, and then their Plurals are of the Feminine Gender ; they are these that follow.

Panella,

<i>P anello,</i>	<i>le anella,</i>	the Rings.
<i>il braccio,</i>	<i>le braccia,</i>	the Arms.
<i>il budello,</i>	<i>le budella,</i>	the Guts.
<i>il calcagno,</i>	<i>le calcagna,</i>	the Heels.
<i>il cerchio,</i>	<i>le cerchia,</i>	the Hoops.
<i>il ciglio,</i>	<i>le ciglia,</i>	the Eye-brows.
<i>il corno,</i>	<i>le corna,</i>	the Horns.
<i>il dito,</i>	<i>le dita,</i>	the Fingers.
<i>il ditello,</i>	<i>le ditella,</i>	the Arm-pits.
<i>il filo,</i>	<i>le fila,</i>	the Threads.
<i>il grido,</i>	<i>le grida,</i>	the Cries.
<i>il guscio,</i>	<i>le guscia,</i>	the Shells.
<i>il ginocchio,</i>	<i>le ginocchia,</i>	the Knees.
<i>il labro,</i>	<i>le labra,</i>	the Lips.
<i>il lenzuolo,</i>	<i>le lenzuola,</i>	the Sheets.
<i>il legno,</i>	<i>le legna,</i>	the Sticks.
<i>il melo,</i>	<i>le mela,</i>	the Apples.
<i>il membro,</i>	<i>le membra,</i>	the Members.
<i>il muro,</i>	<i>le mura,</i>	the Walls.
<i>il migliaio,</i>	<i>le migliaia,</i>	'Thoufands.
<i>P orecchio,</i>	<i>le orecchia,</i>	the Ears.
<i>P osso,</i>	<i>le ossa,</i>	the Bones.
<i>il paio,</i>	<i>le paia,</i>	Pairs.
<i>il pomo,</i>	<i>le poma,</i>	Apples.
<i>il pugno,</i>	<i>le pugna,</i>	Fists.
<i>lo staio,</i>	<i>le staia,</i>	the Bushels.
<i>il riso,</i>	<i>le risa,</i>	Laughters.
<i>l'uova,</i>	<i>le uova,</i>	the Eggs.
<i>il rubbio,</i>	<i>le rubbia,</i>	the Measures.
<i>il vestigio,</i>	<i>le vestigia,</i>	the Footsteps.

Nouns, ending in *co* and *go*, of two Syllables only, take an *h* in the Plural to avoid a harsh Pronunciation: Example; *il Fuoco*, *i Fuochi*, the Fires; *il Luogo* the Place, *i Luoghi* the Places; except *il Porco*

Porco a Hog, *il Greco* a Greek, which make *i Porci*, *i Greci*, Plural.

Figlio a Son, makes *Figli*; *Baccio* a Kiss, *Baci*; *Occhio* an Eye, *Occhi* in the Plural Number: In like manner, other Words form their Plural, by leaving out the final *o* of the singular Number; Words also ending in *io*, end their Plural in two *ii*; as, *vario* several, *varii*; *tempio*, *tempii*, Temples; *incendio*, *incendii*, Burnings; *natio*, *natii*, Natives; or as some Authors write them, *varij*, *tempij*, *incendij*, *natiij*.

V. There are only fix Nouns in the *Italian* Tongue that end in *u*, and these are all of the Feminine Gender, and change not their Terminations in the Plural Number: They are here set down, *viz.*

<i>la grù,</i>	A Crane,	<i>le grù.</i>
<i>la gioventù,</i>	Youth,	<i>le gioventù.</i>
<i>la servitù,</i>	Servitude,	<i>le servitù.</i>
<i>la tribù,</i>	A Tribe,	<i>le tribù.</i>
<i>la virtù,</i>	Virtue,	<i>le virtù.</i>
<i>la schiavitù,</i>	Slavery,	<i>le schiavitù.</i>

OBSERVATIONS on the NOUNS.

THE *Italians* have a peculiar Method of increasing or diminishing the Signification of their Nouns, by the Addition of certain Syllables to the End of each Noun; this Addition serves to add to, or take from, the Merit of the Thing expressed, or to express its remarkable Quality, be it either good or bad, great or little.

1. The

a Man, is formed *Huomuccio*, *Huomuzzo*, *Huomiciuolo*, a poor little Man ; from *Donna* a Woman, is formed *Donniciuola* a poor silly Woman ; and the like as will be found in the Dictionary.

Diminutives, it is to be observed, are frequently of the Masculine Gender, though the first Noun be Feminine ; as, *Camera* a Chamber, Fem. *Cammerino* a little Chamber, Masc.

Nouns of Plenty or Multitude take the Addition of *ame*, or *aglia* ; as, here are much People *ecco Gentame*, or *Gentaglia*.

Of NOUNS ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives have two Terminations only, *O* and *E* : Those ending in *O* are of the Masculine Gender in the Singular Number, and make their Plural in *I* ; as, *bello* fair, *belli* ; *santo* holy, *santi*, Plur. The Feminine Gender of these Nouns in *O* is formed by changing the *O* into *A* in the Singular Number, and into *E* in the Plural ; as, *bello*, *santo*, Masc. *bella*, *santa*, Fem. *belle*, *sante*, Plur.

Adjectives, which end in *E*, form both the Masculine and Feminine Gender in the Singular Number without any Change, and make their Plural in *I* only for both Genders ; as, *un huomo prudente* a prudent Man, *una donna prudente* a prudent Woman, *duoi huomini prudenti* two prudent Men, *due donne prudenti* two prudent Women.

Adjectives are compared by *più* more, *meno* less, *meglio* better, and the Word ~~than~~ *che*, which follows in Comparison, is rendered by *di*, *del*, *che*,
che

the non, &c. as will be shewn fully in the RULES : The Superlative Degree of Adjectives, in English *most*, is formed by changing the last Vowel of the Positive into *issimo*, as from *grande* great, *grandissimo* most great ; *santo* holy, *santissimo* most holy : *The most* is *il più*, *la più* ; as, *il più bello* Masc. *la più bella* Fem. the Fairest, or most Fair.

Observ. 1. The following Adjectives are Exceptions to these general Rules of Comparison.

Buono good, *migliore* better, *ottimo* or *buonissimo* best. *Cattivo* bad, *peggiore* worse, *peissimo* or *cattivissimo* most bad, or worst.

Grande great, *maggiore* greater, *massimo* or *grandissimo* most great, or greatest.

Piccolo little, *minore* less, *minimo* or *piccolissimo* most little, or least.

Observ. 2. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives is often expressed by a Repetition of the Positive ; as,

Your House is most fine
La vostra casa è bella bella.

Observ. 3. The Comparison of Adverbs, of like Sense with the Adjectives above mentioned, is in this wise :

Bene good, *meglio* better, *benissimo* or *ottimamente* best.

Male bad, *peggio* worse, *malissimo* or *peessimamente* most bad, or worst.

Poco little, *meno* or *manco* less, *pochissimo* least.

Note. By changing the last Letter of Nouns Adjectives into *issimamente*, is formed Adverbs of the Superlative Degree ; as, of *dotto* learned, is *dottissimamente*

mamente most learned ; *ricco* rich, *ricchissimamente* most rich ; but this is not frequently admitted of, and rather than make use of so long Words, it is better to express yourself by the Substantive and Adjective in this manner :

The Preacher has preached most eloquently,
Il Predicatore hà predicato con moltissima eloquenza.
 You govern yourself most imprudently,
Vi governate con pochissima prudenza, or con grandissima imprudenza.

OF PRONOUNS.

IT being the principal Business of the following RULES to explain the Difficulties of the *Italian* Tongue; and as these chiefly are found to be in the *Pronouns*, the Learner will find them fully explained in the several *Rules* of this Book, and in the *Table of Pronouns*. I shall however here set down the Declension of the Personal Pronouns, as it will be of Service to the Learner to be thoroughly acquainted with them.

First Person.

Sing.	Nom.	I,	<i>io.</i>
	Gen.	of me,	<i>di me.</i>
	Dat.	to me,	<i>à me, or mi.</i>
	Acc.	me,	<i>me, or mi.</i>
	Abl.	from me,	<i>da me.</i>

Plur.

[27]

Plur.	Nom.	we,	<i>noi.</i>
	Gen.	of us,	<i>di noi.</i>
	Dat.	to us,	<i>à noi, or <u>ci</u>.</i>
	Acc.	us,	<i>noi, <u>ci</u>.</i>
	Abl.	from us,	<i>da noi.</i>

Second Person.

Sing.	Nom.	thou,	<i>tu, or <u>te</u>.</i>
	Gen.	of thee,	<i>di te.</i>
	Dat.	to thee,	<i>à te, or <u>ti</u>.</i>
	Acc.	thee,	<i>te, or <u>ti</u>.</i>
	Abl.	from thee,	<i>da te.</i>
Plur.	Nom.	you or ye,	<i>voi.</i>
	Gen.	of you,	<i>di voi.</i>
	Dat.	to you,	<i>à voi, or <u>vi</u>.</i>
	Acc.	you,	<i>voi, or <u>vi</u>.</i>
	Abl.	from you,	<i>da voi.</i>

Third Person. *For the Masculine.*

Sing.	Nom.	he,	<i>egli, or <u>esse</u>.</i>
	Gen.	of him,	<i>di lui.</i>
	Dat.	to him,	<i>à lui, or <u>gli</u>.</i>
	Acc.	him,	<i>lui, or <u>lo</u>.</i>
	Abl.	from him,	<i>da lui.</i>
Plur.	Nom.	they,	<i>eglino, or <u>essi</u>.</i>
	Gen.	of them,	<i>di loro.</i>
	Dat.	to them,	<i>à loro.</i>
	Acc.	them,	<i>loro, or <u>li</u>.</i>
	Abl.	from them,	<i>da loro.</i>

Third Person. *Feminine.*

Sing.	Nom.	she,	<i>ella, essa, lei.</i>
	Gen.	of her,	<i>di lei.</i>
	Dat.	to her,	<i>à lei. le</i>
	Acc.	her,	<i>lei, or la.</i>
	Abl.	from her,	<i>da lei.</i>
Plur.	Nom.	they,	<i>elleno, or esse.</i>
	Gen.	of them,	<i>di loro.</i>
	Dat.	to them,	<i>à loro, or loro.</i>
	Acc.	them,	<i>loro, or le.</i>
	Abl.	from them,	<i>da loro.</i>

Pronouns Conjunctive have great resemblance with the Pronouns Personal: The Pronouns Personal are,

I, Thou, He, We, Ye, They.

The Pronouns Conjunctive are, *to me or me, to thee or thee, to himself or himself, to herself or herself, to him or him, to us or us, to you or ye, to them or them.*

They are expressed in *Italian* by

mi, ti, si, gli or le, Sing. ci, vi, loro, Plur.

It is easy to remember, that the Pronouns Conjunctive, *me, thee, one's self or himself, to him, them or to them, &c.* are always expressed in *Italian* by *mi, ti, si, gli, or le, loro*: Example;

That pleases me, *questo mi piace.*

God sees thee, *Dio ti vede.*

The Sun rises, *il Sole si leva.*

I will tell him, *io gli dirò, or io le dirò.*

I promise them, *prometto loro*; Masc. and Fem.

But

But these Pronouns will be fully explained in the following RULES, notwithstanding which it may be proper to observe here, that one of the greatest Difficulties they who study the *Italian Language* labour under, is to express the Pronouns Conjunctive joined to the Particles *lo, la, li, le* &c. as, *milo, mila, mili, mile, mine*, &c. when the the Letter *i* of the Pronoun Conjunctive is changed into *e*; as, to say *me of it*, instead of *mine*, you must speak and write *mene*, pronouncing the two Syllables short; the same is to be observed in all the following Pronouns Conjunctive; as for *milo*, write *melo*, &c.

Me, <i>mi</i> ; me	}	to me it,	<i>melo</i> , Masc.
of it,		to me it,	<i>mela</i> , Fem.
<i>mene</i> ,		to me them,	<i>meli, mele</i> , M. & Fem.
Thee, <i>ti</i> ;	}	to thee it,	<i>telo</i> , Masc.
thee of		to thee it,	<i>tola</i> , Fem.
it, <i>tene</i> ,		to thee them,	<i>teli, tele</i> , M. & Fem.
Himself, <i>se</i> ;	}	to himself it,	<i>selo</i> , Masc.
himself of		to himself it,	<i>sela</i> , Fem.
it, <i>sene</i> ,		to himself them,	<i>seli, sels</i> , M. & Fem.
To him,	}	to him it,	<i>glielo</i> , Masc.
<i>gli</i> ; to		to him it,	<i>gliela</i> , Fem.
him of it,		to him them,	<i>glieli, gliels</i> , M. & F.
<i>gliene</i> ,	}		
Us, <i>ci</i> ; us		to us it,	<i>celo</i> , Masc.
of it,		to us it,	<i>cela</i> , Fem.
<i>cene</i> .	}	to us them,	<i>celi, cele</i> , M. & F.
You, <i>vi</i> ;		to you it,	<i>velo</i> , Masc.
you of it,		to you it,	<i>vela</i> , Fem.
<i>vene</i> ,	}	to you them,	<i>veli, vele</i> , M. & F.

To them, *loro*, to them of it, *ne loro* ; putting *loro* always after the Verb.

Note, *loro* is sometimes put before the Verb ; as,
It seems good to them, *ciò loro pare buono*.

Pronouns Possessive are Six in Number, and always take an Article before them, though not expressed in *English* or *French*.

	Singular.		Plural.	
My,	<i>il mio</i>	M. <i>la mia</i>	F. <i>i miei</i> ,	<i>le mie.</i>
Thy,	<i>il tuo</i>	M. <i>la tua</i>	F. <i>i tuoi</i> ,	<i>le tue.</i>
His, her, it,	<i>il suo</i>	M. <i>la sua</i>	F. <i>i suoi</i> ,	<i>le sue,</i>
Our,	<i>il nostro</i>	M. <i>la nostra</i>	F. <i>i nostri</i> ,	<i>le nostre.</i>
Your,	<i>il vostro</i>	M. <i>la vostra</i>	F. <i>i vostri</i> ,	<i>le vostre.</i>
Their,	<i>il loro</i>	M. <i>la loro</i>	F. <i>i loro</i> ,	<i>le loro.</i>

Example :

	Sing. Masc.	Plural Masc.
My Book,	<i>il mio libro</i> ,	<i>i miei libri</i> .
Thy, your Hat,	<i>il tuo cappello</i> ,	<i>i tuoi cappelli</i> .
His Horse,	<i>il suo cavallo</i> ,	<i>i suoi cavalli</i> .
Our Prince,	<i>il nostro Principe</i> ,	<i>i nostri Principi</i> .
Your King,	<i>il vostro Rè</i> ,	<i>i vostri Rè</i> .
Their Country,	<i>il loro paese</i> ,	<i>i loro paesi</i> .

The like of the other Pronouns Possessive, Masculine and Feminine, Singular and Plural : Where it may be noted that *loro* their, never changes its Number or Gender, but is distinguished only by the Article before it, as, *il loro*, *la loro*, &c.

To render the Declension of these Articles with the Pronouns more plain and easy to the Learner, the following Examples are here set down.

MAS-

MASCULINE GENDER.

Singular Number.

Nom.	<i>il mio Libro,</i>	my Book.
Gen.	<i>del mio Libro,</i>	of my Book.
Dat.	<i>al mio Libro,</i>	to my Book.
Abl.	<i>dal mio Libro,</i>	from my Book.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>i miei Libri,</i>	my Books.
Gen.	<i>de' miei Libri,</i>	of my Books.
Dat.	<i>a' miei Libri,</i>	to my Books.
Abl.	<i>da' miei Libri,</i>	from my Books.

FEMININE GENDER.

Singular.

Nom.	<i>la mia Serva,</i>	my Servant.
Gen.	<i>della mia Serva,</i>	of my Servant.
Dat.	<i>alla mia Serva,</i>	to my Servant.
Abl.	<i>dalla mia Serva,</i>	from my Servant.

Plural.

Nom.	<i>le mie Serve,</i>	my Servants.
Gen.	<i>delle mie Serve,</i>	of my Servants.
Dat.	<i>alle mie Serve,</i>	to my Servants.
Abl.	<i>dalle mie Serve,</i>	from my Servants.

Note. I. The Article *il* is not put to the Pronouns, before Nouns of Quality or Kindred; for we say,

Your Majesty, *vostra Maestà*, not, *la vostra Maestà*.
Of your Majesty, *di vostra Maestà*, not, *della vostra Maestà*.

Also,

Also,

My Husband, *mio Marito*, not, *il mio Marito*.

To my Husband, *a mio Marito*, not, *al mio Marito*.

From my Husband, *da mio Marito*, not, *dal mio Marito*.

II. That if these Nouns of Quality or Kindred be of the Plural Number, the Definite Article *i* or *le* is detained ; as,

Their Highnesses, *le Altezze loro*, or, *le loro Altezze*.

Your Brothers, *i vostri Fratelli*, or, *i Fratelli vostri*.
Of your Sisters, *delle vostre Sorelle*.

Pronouns Demonstrative, *This*, *That*, *These*, *Those*, are so called, as they serve to shew or demonstrate any Person, or the Thing spoken of ; as,

This Man, *questo*, or, *questo qui*.

This Woman, *questa*, or, *questa qui*.

Costui Masc. and *costei* Fem. *Colui* Masc. and *colei* Fem. *This Man* or *Woman*, are also Pronouns Demonstrative, and used only when speaking of a Man, Woman, or other living Substance ; and that without any Substantive joined to them, and at the End of a Speech only, and never at the Beginning or Middle ; as, 'Tis for this Man, do not give it to that, *è per costui, non lo date à colui*. Pay this Woman, send that away, *pagate costei, è rimandate colei*. And note, these Pronouns are chiefly used when speaking to Persons in a slighting manner :— *Costui* and *costei* make *costoro* Plur. *Colui* and *colei* make *coloro* Plur. Masc. and Fem.

Pronouns

Pronouns Interrogative serve to ask Questions ;
as, *Who? What? Which? chi? che? quale.*

Who is it ? *chi è?*

Who told you so ? *chi v' hà detto questo?*

What Book is this ? *che libro è?*

What are you doing ? *che fate?*

What House is it ? *quale è la casa?*

Note. For the greater Beauty of Expression,
che is often put for *quale* ; as,

What Man is that ? *che uomo è?*

Pronouns Relative, *That, Who, Which, Whose,*
or, *Of whom*, are expressed by *che, chi, quale, and*
di cui, or, *di chi*.

Observ. I. The Pronouns Relative, *that, who,*
which, or *what*, are expressed by *che*, instead of
quale, quali, il quale ; as,

The Book that teaches, *il libro che insegna.*

II. *Boccacio, Davilla*, and other the best Authors
use *cui* whose, with the Article *il*, in the follow-
ing manner of speaking ;

Whose fair Visage, *il cui bel viso*, or, *il di cui*
bel viso.

Whose Beauties, *le cui bellezze*, or, *le di cui*
bellezze.

To whose Brother, *al cui fratello*, or, *al di*
cui fratello. And the like.

III. *Esso* he, himself, or, it, *Mas.* is a Pronoun
Relative, as expressed in the *Table of Pronouns* ;
and *note*, that *esso*, is for greater Elegance of Ex-
pression

pression put with *con* and *noi*, *voi*, *loro*, *lei*, &c. as, Along with us, *con esso noi*; along with them, *con esso loro*; along with him, *con esso seco*; along with me, *con esso meco*, &c.

General Observations concerning the PRONOUNS in Speaking.

1. **T**HE Affirmative, by which we affirm the Thing spoken of, when the *Italians* put the Pronoun before the Verb; as,

I give it you, *velo do*.

But if the Verb be of the Infinitive Mood, or a Participle with two Pronouns, the Pronouns are put after the Verb, and commonly joined to it, by cutting off the last Letter of the Verb; as,

For to shew it to him, *per mostrarglielo*.
Having seen them, *vedutili*, or *vedutele*.

2. The Affirmative-negative, when the Pronouns are put before or after the Verb, as in the simple Affirmative, putting *non* for *not*; as,

I do not give it you, *non velo do*.

3. The Question, when the Verb, if joined to a single Pronoun, is followed by the Pronoun; as,

Does he go? *Va egli?*

But if there be two or more Pronouns, the two last are put first, and the Personal Pronoun *I*, &c. is placed last; as,

Do I give it you? *Velo do io?*

The

The Question-negative is in like manner, and begins with *non* ; as,

Do not I give it you? *Non velo do io?*

4. The Imperative Mood in bidding or commanding, when the Pronouns are put after the Verb ; as,

Give it me, *datemelo.*

In the Imperative Negative, the Pronouns are put before the Verb, beginning with the Negative *non* ; as,

Do not give it him, *non glielo date.*

Note. The *Italians* use frequently the Infinitive Mood of Verbs, instead of the Imperative, in speaking to Inferiors ; as,

Do not tell this to any Man, *non dir questo a nessuno.*

In speaking to an Equal, the second Person Plural of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense ; as,

Do not go, for you will repent of it, *non andate, che ve ne pentirete.*

In speaking to a Superior, the third Person Singular of the Subjunctive Mood, Present Tense ; as,

Say not so I beseech you, *non dica questo per gratia.*

These few Examples are sufficient for the Learner's present Observation, as the right placing of the Pronouns in general is fully explained hereafter.

Of

*Of the Auxiliary VERBS Havere to have,
and Essere to be.*

IT is proper that the Learner be acquainted with these two *Auxiliary* Verbs, before he proceeds in his Compositions; for this Reason they are here set down at the Beginning: And it is recommended to him, to make himself perfect in conjugating these two Verbs, as the true Formation of all other Verbs depend greatly on these two: And as few Persons set themselves to learn the *Italian* Tongue, without being first acquainted with the common Rules of Grammar in their own Native Tongue, or the *Latin* Language, I shall not take up their Time in explaining the Use of Moods and Tenses, but only remark, that Verbs in the *Italian* Tongue may be conjugated with or without the Pronouns at Pleasure; though I chuse here to set them down to make the Learner more readily acquainted with them.

HAVERE, to have.

Indicative Mood.

Present-Tense, *do.*

Sing.	<i>Io hò,</i>	I have.
	<i>tu hai,</i>	thou hast.
	<i>egli hà,</i>	he has.
Plur.	<i>noi habbiamo,</i>	we have.
	<i>voi havete,</i>	ye have.
	<i>eglino hanno,</i>	they have.

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense, *had.*

Sing.	<i>Io havevo,</i>	I had.
	<i>tu havevi,</i>	thou hadst.
	<i>egli haveva,</i>	he had.
Plur.	<i>noi havevamo,</i>	we had.
	<i>voi havevate,</i>	ye had.
	<i>eglino havevano.</i>	they had.

The Preterit, or Definite Tense, *had.*

Sing.	<i>Io hebbi,</i>	I had.
	<i>tu havesti,</i>	thou hadst.
	<i>egli ebbe,</i>	he had.
Plur.	<i>noi havemmo,</i>	we had.
	<i>voi haveste,</i>	ye had.
	<i>eglino ebbero, or ebbero,</i>	they had.

The Future Tense, *shall or will.*

Sing.	<i>Io haverò, or haurò,</i>	I shall or will have.
	<i>tu haverai, haurai,</i>	thou shalt have.
	<i>egli haverà, haurà,</i>	he shall have.
Plur.	<i>noi haveremo, haurémo,</i>	we shall have.
	<i>voi haverete, hauréte,</i>	ye shall have.
	<i>eglino haveranno, hauranno,</i>	they shall have.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>Hàbbi, or habbi tu,</i>	have thou.
	<i>bàbbia, or àbbia egli,</i>	let him have.

E

Plur.

Plur.	<i>habbiâmo noi,</i>	let us have.
	<i>habbiâte voi,</i>	have ye.
	<i>hâbbiano eglino,</i>	let them have.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense, *may* or *can*.

Sing.	<i>Ch' io habbia,</i>	that I may have.
	<i>ch' tu hâbbi, or hâbbia,</i>	that thou may'st have.
	<i>ch' egli hâbbia,</i>	that he may have.
Plur.	<i>che noi habbiâmo,</i>	that we may have.
	<i>che voi habbiâte,</i>	that ye may have.
	<i>ch' eglino habbiâno,</i>	that they may have.

Imperfect Tense, *should*, &c.

Sing.	<i>Io haverêi, or havrei,</i>	I should have.
	<i>tu haverêsti,</i>	thou should'st have.
	<i>egli haverêbbe,</i>	he should have.
Plur.	<i>noi haverémmo,</i>	we should have.
	<i>voi haverêste,</i>	ye should have.
	<i>eglino haverêbbero, ha-</i>	they should have.
	<i>veriano, haverebbono,</i>	

Preterit, or Definite Tense, *had*, *might*, &c.

Sing.	<i>Ch' io havéssi,</i>	that I had.
	<i>che tu havéssi,</i>	that thou hadst.
	<i>ch' egli havésse,</i>	that he had.
Plur.	<i>che noi havéssimo,</i>	that we had.
	<i>che voi havéste,</i>	that ye had.
	<i>ch' eglino havéssero,</i>	that they had.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Havere, to Have.

Participle Common.

Havuto, Had.

Gerund.

Havendo, Having.

Note, By these Tenses, Verbs Active may be conjugated, as is observed in my RULES for the *French Tongue*, page 47, to which I refer the Reader; And here also by the Addition of the Participle Common *Havuto* Had, to the Tenses above conjugated, will be formed the several other Tenses or Parts of Time, which Grammarians frequently make use of; as will be seen in these following

COMPOUND TENSES of the VERB

Havere, to Have.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io hò havuto,</i>	I have had.
	<i>tu hai havuto,</i>	thou hast had.
	<i>egli hà havuto,</i>	he has had.

Plur.	<i>noi habbiamo havuto,</i>	we have had.
	<i>voi havete havuto,</i>	ye have had,
	<i>eglino hanno havuto,</i>	they have had.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io havévo havuto,</i>	I had had.
	<i>tu havévi havuto,</i>	thou hast had.
	<i>egli havéva havuto,</i>	he has had.
Plur.	<i>noi havevâmo havuto,</i>	we have had.
	<i>voi havevâte havuto,</i>	ye have had.
	<i>eglino havévano havuto,</i>	they have had.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io hebbi havuto,</i>	I have had.
	<i>tu havesti havuto,</i>	thou hadst had.
	<i>egli hebbe havuto,</i>	he had had.
Plur.	<i>noi havemmo havuto,</i>	we had had.
	<i>voi haveste havuto,</i>	ye had had.
	<i>eglino ebbero havuto,</i>	they had had.

Future Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io haverò havuto,</i>	I shall have had.
	<i>tu haverai havuto,</i>	thou shalt have had.
	<i>egli haverà havuto,</i>	he shall have had.
Plur.	<i>noi haveremo havuto,</i>	we shall have had.
	<i>voi haverete havuto,</i>	ye shall have had.
	<i>eglino haverà havuto,</i>	they shall have had.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Ch' io habbia havuto,</i>	that I have had.
	<i>ch' tu habbia havuto,</i>	that thou hast had.
	<i>ch' egli habbia havuto,</i>	that he has had.
		Plur.

[41]

Plur. *ch' noi habbiamo havuto*, that we have had.
ch' voi habbiato havuto, that ye have had.
ch' eglus habbiano havuto, that they have had.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. *Io haverèi havuto*, I should have had.
tu haverésti havuto, thou should'st have had.
egli haverèbbe havuto, he should have had.

Plur. *noi haverémmo havuto*, we should have had.
voi haverésti havuto, ye should have had.
eglino haverébbero havuto, they should have had.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing. *S' io havéssi havuto*, If I had had.
se tu havéssi havuto, if thou hadst had.
s' egli havésse havuto, if he had.

Plur. *se noi havéssimo havuto*, if we had had.
se voi havéste havuto, if ye had had.
s' eglino havéssero havuto, if they had had.

Infinitive Mood.

Havere havuto, to have had.

Participle.

Havendo havuto, having had.

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb **ESSERE, to be.**

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sono, tu sei, egli è,</i>	I am. thou art. he is.
Plur.	<i>noi siamo, voi siete, or siete, eglino sono,</i>	we are. ye are. they are.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io ero, or era, tu eri, egli era,</i>	I was. thou wast. he was.
Plur.	<i>noi eramo, voi erate, eglino erano,</i>	we were. ye were. they were.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io fui, tu fosti, or fosti, egli fu,</i>	I was. thou wert. he was.
Plur.	<i>noi fummo, voi foste, or foste, eglino furono,</i>	we were. ye were. they were.

The

The Future Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io farò,</i> <i>tu farai,</i> <i>egli farà,</i>	I shall or will be. thou shalt be. he shall be.
Plur.	<i>noi faremo,</i> <i>voi fareste,</i> <i>eglino faranno,</i>	we shall or will be. ye shall be. they shall be.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	<i>Sii tu,</i> <i>sia egli,</i>	Be thou. let him be.
Plur.	<i>siâmo noi,</i> <i>siâte voi,</i> <i>siâno, or sieno eglino,</i>	let us be. be ye. let them be.

Optative, or Subjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io sia,</i> <i>che tu sia, or si,</i> <i>ch'egli sia,</i>	That I may be. that thou may'st be. that he may be.
Plur.	<i>che noi siâmo,</i> <i>che voi siâte,</i> <i>ch'eglino siâno, or sieno,</i>	that we may be. that ye may be. that they may be.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sarei, or faria,</i> <i>tu saresti,</i> <i>egli sarebbe, or fareia,</i>	I should, or would be. thou should'st be. he should be.
-------	---	---

Plur.

Plur. <i>noi saremmo,</i>	we should be.
<i>voi sareste,</i>	ye should be.
<i>eglino sarebbero,</i>	they should be.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing. <i>Cb'io fossi,</i>	That I were or might be.
<i>che tu fossi,</i>	that thou wert.
<i>ch'egli fosse,</i>	that he were.
Plur. <i>che noi fossimo,</i>	that we were.
<i>che voi foste,</i>	that ye were.
<i>ch'eglino fossero,</i>	that they were.

Infinitive Mood.

Essere, to be.

Participle Active, or Common.

Stato Masc. *stata* Fem. Been.

Gerund.

Essendo, Being.

* * The COMPOUND Tenses of this Verb *Essere*, to be ; are formed by a repetition of its own Tenses, with the Participle Common *stato* Masc. or *stata* Fem. as follows.

Indicative

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io sono stato,</i> <i>tu sei stato,</i> <i>egli è stato,</i>	I have been. thou hast been. he has been.
Plur.	<i>noi siamo stati,</i> <i>voi siete stati,</i> <i>eglino sono stati,</i>	we have been. ye have been. they have been.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	<i>Io ero stato,</i> <i>tu eri stato,</i> <i>egli era stato,</i>	I had been. thou hadst been. he had been.
Plur.	<i>noi eramo stati,</i> <i>voi erate stati,</i> <i>eglino erano stati,</i>	we had been. ye had been. they had been.

Optative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io sia stato,</i> <i>che tu sii, or sia stato,</i> <i>ch'egli sia stato,</i>	That I have been. that thou hast been. that he has been.
Plur.	<i>che noi siamo stati,</i> <i>che voi siete stati,</i> <i>ch'eglino siano stati,</i>	that we have been. that ye have been. that they have been.

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. <i>Io sarei stato,</i>	I should or would have been.
<i>tu saresti stato,</i>	thou should'st have been.
<i>egli sarebbe stato,</i>	he should have been.
Plur. <i>noi saremmo stati,</i>	we should have been.
<i>voi sareste stati,</i>	ye should have been.
<i>eglino sarebbero stati,</i>	they should have been.

Preterit, or Definite Tense.

Sing. <i>Se io fossi stato,</i>	If I had been.
<i>se tu fossi stato,</i>	if thou hadst been.
<i>s'egli fosse stato,</i>	if he had been.
Plur. <i>se noi fossimo stati,</i>	if we had been.
<i>se voi foste stati,</i>	if ye had been.
<i>s'eglino fossero stati,</i>	if they had been.

Infinitive Mood.

Essere stato, to have been.

Participle:

Essendo stato, having been.

Note. It is to be observed, that the Participle Common of this Verb, changes its Gender and Number, as Occasion requires; *i. e.* *Stato* Sing. *stati* Plur. Masc. *Stata* Sing. *state* Plural. Fem.

Impersonals

Impersonal of the VERB *Essere*.

Singular.

Plural.

There is, <i>c'è</i> or <i>v'è</i> .	There are, <i>ci sono</i> , <i>vi sono</i> .
There was, <i>c'era</i> .	There were, <i>c'erano</i> .
There was, <i>ci fù</i> .	There were, <i>ci furono</i> .
There has been, <i>c'è stato</i> .	There have been, <i>ci sono stati</i> .
There had been, <i>c'era stato</i> .	<i>C'erano stati</i> .
There shall be, <i>ci sarà</i> .	<i>Ci saranno</i> .
Let there be, <i>ci sia</i> .	<i>Ci siano</i> .
That there may be, <i>che ci sia</i> .	<i>Che ci siano</i> .
That there were, <i>che ci fosse</i> .	<i>Che si fossero</i> .
There would be, <i>ci sarebbe</i> .	<i>Ci sarebbero</i> .
That there has been, <i>che ci, or, vi sia stato</i> Sing. <i>che ci siano stati</i> ; or, <i>vi siano stati</i> Plur.	
If there had been, <i>se ci, or, vi fosse stato</i> Sing. <i>ci, or vi fossero stati</i> Plur.	
That there had been, <i>che vi fosse stato</i> Sing. <i>che vi fossero stati</i> Plur.	
There would have been, <i>ci sarebbe stato</i> Sing. <i>vi sarebbero stati</i> Plur.	
When there has, or shall have been, <i>quando vi sarà stato</i> Sing. <i>quando vi saranno stati</i> Plur.	

There

There to have been, *esservi stato.*
In there having been, *essendovi stato.*

* * Learners also find a Difficulty in expressing rightly in *Italian* the *English* Impersonals, *There is of it, or them; There is not of it; Is there of it?* and the like: For their Ease therefore I shall here set down these Impersonals through all the Tenses, Singular and Plural.

There is of it, *cen'è, ven'è.*

There is of them, *cene sono, vene sono.*

There is not of it, *non cen'è; non cene sono.*

Is there of it? *cen'è? cene sono?*

Is there not of it? *non cen'è? non cene sono?*

There was of it, *ven'era; ven'erano.*

There was not of it, *non ven'era; non ven'erano.*

Was there of it? *ven'era? ven'erano?*

Was there not of it? *non ven'era? non ven'erano?*

There was of it, *vene fù; vene furono.*

There was not of it, *non vene fù; non vene furono.*

Was there of it? *vene fù? vene furono?*

Was there not of it? *non vene fù? non vene furono?*

There shall be of it, *vene sarà; vene saranno.*

There shall not be of it, *non vene sarà; non vene saranno.*

Shall there be of it? *venè sarà? vene saranno?*

Shall there not be of it? *non vene sarà? non vene saranno?*

That there may be of it, *che vene sia; che vene siano.*

There may not be of it, *che non vene sia; che non vene siano.*

That

That there were of it, *che vene fosse ; che vene fossero.*

There were not of it, *che non vene fosse ; che non vene fossero.*

There would be of it, *vene sarebbe ; vene sarebbero.*
There would not be of it, *non vene sarebbe ; non vene sarebbero.*

Would there not be of it? *non vene sarebbe? non vene sarebbero?*

If there had been of it, *se vene fosse stato ; se vene fossero stati.*

If there had not been of it, *se non vene fosse stato ; se non vene fossero stati.*

Had there been of it? *vene sarebbe stato? vene sarebbero stati?*

Had there not been of it? *quando non vene sarebbe stato? or, quando non vene sarebbero stati?*

If there had been of it, *se vene fosse stato ; or, se vene fossero stati.*

If there had not been of it, *se non vene fosse stato ; se non vene fossero stati.*

There would have been of it, *vene sarebbe stato ; vene sarebbero stati.*

There would not have been of it, *non vene sarebbe stato ; non vene sarebbero stati.*

Would there have been of it? *vene sarebbe stato? vene sarebbero stati?*

Would there not have been of it? *non vene sarebbe stato? non vene sarebbero stati?*

There will be of it, *vene sarà stato ; vene saranno stati.*

There will not be of it, *non vene sarà stato ; non vene saranno stati.*

Will there be of it ? *vene sarà stato ? vene saranno stati ?*

Will there not be of it ? *non vene sarà stato ? non vene saranno stati ?*

For there having been too much of it, *per esservene stato troppo.*

In there having been too little of it, *essendovene stato troppo poco.*

Observ. I. If we speak of the Feminine Gender, we must put *stata* Sing. *state* Plur. in the Place of *stato*, *stati*.

II. *There* of it, or *them*, is expressed by *cene*, speaking of the Place in which we are present, *vene* in mentioning the Place where we are not, unless in Parts of Time, when *ne* only is expressed ; as, How many Months is it ? it is ten (of them) at least, *quanti mese sono ? ne sono dieci al meno.*

III. If the Particle *ci* there, is followed by a Verb, it need not be expressed ; as, He will see me there, *mi vedrà ;* He will give it you there, *ti darà.*

[51]

R U L E S

FOR THE

Italian Tongue,

In *E N G L I S H*;

According to the Parts of Speech,
divided into Chapters.

To the L E A R N E R.

The constant Use of the Article Il, before Nouns and Pronouns, in the Italian Tongue, will cause it often to occur in the following RULES: To avoid therefore the Inconvenience of a frequent Repetition, and the great Perplexity generally found in Grammars, the following Table is drawn up, wherein the Formation of that Article in its several Cases and Genders, before different Nouns, &c. is made easy, and at one View pointed out.

F 2

A TABLE

A TABLE of the Article *Il, The, It, &c.*

1. Before Nouns Masculine, beginning with a Consonant.		Nom.	Gen.	Dat.	Accus.	Abl.
	Sing.	<i>il</i>	<i>del</i>	<i>al</i>	<i>il</i>	<i>dal</i>
	Plur.	<i>i, fi</i>	<i>dei, de'</i>	<i>ai, a'</i>	<i>i</i>	<i>dai, da'</i>
2. Before Nouns Masc. beginning with the Letter S, followed by another Consonant.						
	Sing.	<i>lo</i>	<i>dello</i>	<i>allo</i>	<i>lo</i>	<i>dallo</i>
	Plur.	<i>gli</i>	<i>degli</i>	<i>agli</i>	<i>gli</i>	<i>dagli</i>
3. Before Nouns Masculine, which begin with a Vowel, or the letter H,						
	Sing.	<i>l'</i>	<i>dell'</i>	<i>all'</i>	<i>l'</i>	<i>dall'</i>
	Plur.	<i>gli, gl'</i> *	<i>degli</i>	<i>agli</i>	<i>gli, gl'</i>	<i>dagli</i>
4. Before Nouns Feminine, which begin with a Consonant,						
	Sing.	<i>la</i>	<i>della</i>	<i>alla</i>	<i>la</i>	<i>dalla</i>
	Plur.	<i>le</i>	<i>delle</i>	<i>alle</i>	<i>le</i>	<i>dalle</i>
5. Before Nouns Fem. which begin with a Vowel,						
	Sing.	<i>l'</i>	<i>dell'</i>	<i>all'</i>	<i>l'</i>	<i>dall'</i>
	Plur.	<i>le, l' +</i>	<i>delle, del'</i>	<i>alle, all'</i>	<i>le, l'</i>	<i>dalle, dall'</i>

* Note *gli* in the Plural is not apostrophed, unless the following Noun begins with an *I*; as *gl'ingegni, gl'ardori, gli onori*. + This Article *le* is apostrophed in the Plural only, before a Word beginning with *E*; as *le anime, l'eminenze*.

C H A P. I.

Of ARTICLES *and* NOUNS.

R U L E I.

LET it be observed, that the *Italian* Tongue in general takes an Article before the Noun, with some few Exceptions only, which will occur in these Rules; and the Article agrees with the Noun in Number and Gender, as in *Latin* and other Languages.

Exception from this Rule, if a Verb and the Noun following may be turned by a Verb only in *Latin*, then no Article is put before the Noun.

Example. I take pleasure, *hò gusto.*
I am dry, *hò sete.*

R U L E II.

All Noun Substantives, taken in a total Sense, have before them the Article *il*, *lo* Masc. Sing. before a Noun beginning with an *S* and another Consonant, *l'* before a Vowel or the Letter *h*; *la* Fem. The Plural of *il* is *i*, and sometimes *li*; *lo* makes *gli*, *l'* makes *gl'*, *la* makes *le*, which sometimes loses its *e* before another *e*.

Ex. I love Fire, *amò il fuoco.*
The Scholar studies, *lo scolare studia.*

54 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

The Lady is agreeable, *la donna è dolce.*

Children are obedient, *i fanti sono ubbidienti.*

Instruments of Musick, *gl' instrumenti di musica.*

The Souls of the Blessed, *le anime de' beati.*

N. B. The Articles being fully set down in the *Table of Articles*, they will not be any more particularly mentioned, but Reference will be made to that Table.

R U L E III.

Names of Rivers and Mountains take the Article *the* before them ; also the Names of Kingdoms, if they have not *in* before them.

Ex. Thames is rich, *la Tamisa è ricca.*

Ætna burns, l' Ætna abbruccia.

Italy is pleasant, *l' Italia è dilettevole.*

He is in Spain, *è in Spagna.*

R U L E IV.

When the *Italians* make use of the words *il Signor* or *la Signora*, before Nouns of Office or Dignity, they put no other Article before the Nouns of Office or Dignity ; but if they use the word *Monsignor*, the Article *il* or *lo* is put before the following Noun.

Ex. My Lord Bishop of Rochester, *il Signor Vescovo di Rochester*, or, *Monsignor il Vescovo di Rochester.*

My Lord Keeper of the Seals, *il Signor guarda Sigilli.*

R U L E

Of Articles and Nouns.

55

R U L E V.

If a proper Name be before Nouns of Dignity and Office, no Article is put before either of them.

Ex. Thomas, Bishop of Rochester, Dean of Westminster,
Tomaso, Vescovo di Rochester, Decano di Westminster.

R U L E VI.

A or *an*, before Parts of Time, Measures and Weights, are expressed by *il*, *lo*, *la*, &c. as in the Table of Articles.

Ex. How many times a Week, *quante volte la settimana.*
How much an Ounce, *quanto l' oncia.*
The Yard, *la verge.*

R U L E VII.

In the, before Parts of Time, is expressed by the Articles *il*, *lo*, &c. as in the Table, or else by the Article *nel* in the *.

Ex. In the Year Ninety-nine, *l' anno*, or, *nell' anno nonanta nove.*

* The Article *nel* changes its Gender and Number in this wise: Sing. *nel*, *nello* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *nella* Fem. *nell'* before a Vowel. Plur. *nei*, *ne'*, *negli* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *nelle* Fem. *negli* before a Vowel.

R U L E

56 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

R U L E V I I I.

The Articles are put before Pronouns Possessive, and not before the Noun that follows; *Vide* Page 30.

Ex. My Father, *il mio Padre.*

His Friends, *i suoi amici M. le sue amicizie F.*

R U L E I X.

Participles in *Ing* in *English*, having *the* or other Article before them, and when turned in *Italian* by the Infinitive Mood, take before the Infinitive of the Verb the same Articles as Substantives do.

Ex. The Rising of the Sun, *il levare del Sole.*

At the King's Rising, *al levare del Rè.*

R U L E X.

Nouns Substantives, having *of*, *from*, *any* or *some*, before them, expressed or not, and taken in particular, require in *Italian* the Article *del* * before them: But if the Noun may be taken in general, no Article is necessary.

Ex. He sells Wine, *vende del vino*, or, *vino.*

Bring some Beer, *portate della biera.*

* The Article *del* changes its Gender and Number in this wise: Sing. *del*, *dello* before *S* and a Consonant, *Mas. della* *F. dell'* before a Vowel. Plur. *delli*, *de'*, *degli* *M. delle* *F. degl'* before a Vowel. Note, *de'* is better used than *delli* in the Plural, as in the fifth Example.

Of Articles and Nouns: 57

Give me some Mackrell, *datemi dello scembro.*
 The Spirit of Man, *lo Spirito dell' uomo.*
 The Eminence of Cardinals, *l' eminenza de'
 Cardinali.*
 The Harmony of Instruments, *la simphonia
 degl' instrumenti.*
 She wears Gloves, *porta guanti:*
 He eats Pies, *mangia pasticciatti.*

R U L E XI.

With the, before Nouns, followed by Verbs, is *del* Masc. &c. as in the foregoing Rule; and *with* single is *di*: But if *with* expresses a Society, or Conjunction of Nouns, and when in Latin is made by *cum*, in Italian it is *con*. *With the*, *with my*, *with his*, or other Pronouns, are expressed by *col* Masc. *

Ex. He received me with the best manners, *mi
 receve della più bella maniera.*
 She weeps with Joy, *piange di allegrezza.*
 Cream with Sugar and Wine, *la crema co'l
 zucchero et co'l vino.*
 With my Books, *co' miei libri.*

With me, is *meco*, with you *seco*, with him *con
 lui*, with us *con noi*, with ye or you *con voi*, with
 them *con loro*.

* The Article *col* changes in Gender and Number in this manner: Sing. *col*, *collo* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *collo* Fem. *colle* before a Vowel. Plur. *coi*, *co'*, *colli* before S and a Consonant, Masc. *colle* Fem. *colle* before a Vowel.

R U L E

58 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

R U L E XII.

In the, after a Comparifon, or the Superlative Degree, is expreffed by *of the*, *del*, &c. as in Rule 10. Alfo in the fame Senfe, *in* is turned by *di*.

Ex. The beft in the World, *il meglio del mondo*.
The fineft in England, *il più squifito d' Inghilterra*.

R U L E XIII.

The Verbs *godere* to enjoy, *ringratiare* to thank, and all Verbs reciprocal, which have the Particle *fi* before them in the Dictionary, take *del*, &c. as in Rule 10. after them, before the Subftantives, and *di* before Pronouns and proper Names; and the Particle *ne*, which has the fame Meaning as *en* in *French*, is made ufe of in the room of the Pronouns Perfonal *of*, *for*, *from*, *at him*, *her*, *it*, &c.

Ex. I thank you for the Book, *la ringratio del libro*.

She diftrufts the Company, *fi diffida della compagnia*.

We thank her for it, *ne lo ringratiamo*.

We laugh at him, *ci burliamo di lui*, or, *ce ne burliamo*.

R U L E XIV.

When a Verb and a Noun in *English* may both be rendered by a Verb only in *Latin*, the Nouns take not an Article before it.

Ex.

Of Articles and Nouns.

59

Ex. I have a Mind, *hò voglia, desio; cupio Lat.*
We take Pleasure, *abbiamo gusto; delectamur Lat.* See RULE I.

R U L E X V.

Adverbs of Quantity, when turned into Adjectives, are put in the same Gender and Number, as the Substantives that follow; otherwise the Adverb takes *of* or *than* after it, which are expressed by *di*.

Ex. Much Beauty, *molta beltà.*
Little Wit, *il poco di spirito.*
More than five hundred Pounds, *più di cinque cento lire.*

R U L E X VI.

Adjectives of good, and bad Qualities, are put before the Substantives, and if they have not *The* before them, the Article *di* is put before the Adjective; but if they be in a general Sense, no Article is put to the Plural Number.

Ex. We drink bad Wine, *beviamo di cattivo vino.*
The English eat good Bread, *i Inglese mangiano di buon pane.*
They sell Pastry, *vendono pasticcietti.*

R U L E X VII.

Adjectives of Colours, Nations, Elemental Qualities, and Participles Common, are put after the Substantives, without an Article before the Adjective.

Ex.

60 Of Articles and Nouns. Ch. I.

Ex. I have red Wine, *ho vino, or, del vino rosso.*
 An Italian Book, *un libro Italiano.*
 She drinks cold Water, *beve dell' acqua tepida.*

R U L E XVIII.

Of and from, before Pronouns and proper Names, are turned by *di*; but if the Noun be in the Ablative Case, or after a Verb of Motion, *da* is made use of. *Of the* and *from the*, are *dall'* Masc. &c.

Ex. Of my Mother, *di, or, da mia madre.*
 I return from Paris, *torno di Parigi.*
 I have received of the Gentleman, *ho ricevuto dal Signor.*
 Get you from me, *scotatevi da me.*
 To separate one from the other, *separare l' un dall' altro.*

R U L E XIX.

Nouns Substantives, having *at* or *to* before them, expressed or understood, are turned by *to the*, which in *Italian* is *al* † Masc.

Ex. I go to Market, *vò al mercato.*
 He is at Church, *è alla chiesa.*

* The Article *dall* changes its Genders and Numbers in this wise: Sing. *dal, dallo* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *dalla* Fem. *dall'* before a Vowel. Plur. *da, dagli* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *dalle* Fem. *dagl'* before a Vowel.

† *Al* makes its Genders and Numbers in this wise: Sing. *al, alla* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *alla* Fem. *all'* before a Vowel. Plur. *a, agli* before *S* and a Consonant, Masc. *alle* Fem. *agl'* before a Vowel.

R U L E

R U L E XX.

In the, into the, are al M, &c. as in the foregoing Rule; but if they may be turned by within the, they are expressed by nel, as in the seventh Rule.

Ex. He is in the Country, *è alla campagna.*

Put the Horses into the Coach, *mettete i cavalli alla carrozza.*

He is in the Room, *è nella camera.*

He is merry in the Gardens, *è piacevole nei, or, ne' giardini.*

R U L E XXI.

To, before names of Kingdoms, and the word Town, is expressed by in after all Verbs.

Ex. He goes to Italy, *va in Italia.*

She is come to town, *è venuta in città.*

Into also, in the same Sense, is expressed by in.

Ex. He will go into Flanders, *anderà in Fiandra.*

R U L E XXII.

To, before Pronouns and proper Names. is expressed by a or in.

Ex. I will write to my Lord, *scriverò a il mio Signor.*

He is come to Rome, *è giunto in Roma.*

G

R U L E

R U L E XXIII.

To Night, At Night, are expressed by *stà sera,*
or *alla sera* : *Alfo, At Noon* is *al mezzo dì.*

Ex. I will see you at Night, *vi vederò stà sera,*
or, *alla sera.* At Noon, *al mezzo*
dì.

R U L E XXIV.

Nouns of *Number* take no Article before them,
except Parts of Time.

Ex. Ten Pounds, *dieci lire.*

Twenty Men, *vinti huomini.*

Three hundred and one Soldiers, *trecento ed*
un soldati.

Five Hours, *le cinque hore.*

At Ten o' Clock, *alle dieci hore.*

The fifth, *il quinto M. la quinta F.*

C H A P. II. Of PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE, and ABSOLUTE.

R U L E I.

PRonouns Possessive, and Absolute, take the same Articles as Nouns Substantives.

E X A M P L E.

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Mine, my,	<i>il mio,</i>	<i>la mia.</i>	<i>i miei,</i>	<i>le mie.</i>
Thine, thy,	<i>il tuo,</i>	<i>la tua.</i>	<i>i tuoi,</i>	<i>le tue.</i>
His, hers,	<i>il suo,</i>	<i>la sua.</i>	<i>i suoi,</i>	<i>le sue.</i>
Our,	<i>il nostro,</i>	<i>la nostra.</i>	<i>i nostri,</i>	<i>le nostre.</i>
Your,	<i>il vostro,</i>	<i>la vostra.</i>	<i>i vostri,</i>	<i>le vostre.</i>
Their,	<i>il loro,</i>	<i>la loro.</i>	<i>i loro,</i>	<i>le loro.</i>

	Sing.		Plur.
Of, or, from	{	<i>del mio M.</i>	<i>de' miei M.</i>
mine.		<i>della mio F.</i>	<i>delle mie F.</i>
Of his, hers,	{	<i>dal suo M.</i>	<i>dà' suoi M.</i>
it's.		<i>dalla sua F.</i>	<i>dalle sue F.</i>
To mine,	{	<i>al mio M.</i>	<i>a' miei M.</i>
		<i>alla mia F.</i>	<i>alla mie F.</i>

— In Page 31, it is remarked, that the Article is not always put before Pronouns Possessive Absolute, when the Noun it agrees with be of Singular Number: To what is there mentioned let it be here added, that these Pronouns Absolute, *'tis mine*, &c. take not also the Article before them, but we must say,

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Maf.	Fem.	Maf.	Fem.
'tis mine,	<i>è mio,</i>	<i>è mia,</i>	<i>sono miei,</i>	<i>sono mie,</i>
'tis thine,	<i>è tuo,</i>	<i>è tua.</i>	<i>son tuoi,</i>	<i>son tue.</i>
'tis his,	<i>è suo,</i>	<i>è sua.</i>	<i>son suoi,</i>	<i>son sue.</i>
'tis ours,	<i>è nostro,</i>	<i>è nostra.</i>	<i>son nostri,</i>	<i>son nostre.</i>
'tis yours,	<i>è vostro,</i>	<i>è vostra.</i>	<i>son vostri,</i>	<i>son vostre.</i>
'tis theirs,	<i>è loro,</i>	<i>è loro.</i>	<i>son loro,</i>	<i>son loro.</i>



some the
here be a
an : And
i though

V. S. or,

or, non

ie Speech
the Expres-
e Verb in-
is always
V. S. ha
id the fre-
uns ella or
elle, ella,
lei, la.
le signorie
le signorie

RULE

-- In Pa
is not a
Absolute
Singular
let it be
lute, 't
before t

'tis mine
'tis thine
'tis his,
'tis ours
'tis your
'tis their

CHAP. III.

OF PRONOUNS.

RULE I.

ALL Personal Pronouns are put before the Verb in the Affirmative; and if there be a Negative, *Non* is put before the Pronoun: And *note*, the second Person Plural is used, though speaking to a single Person. *

Ex. I give it you, *velo dō*, or, *lo dō à V. S.* or, *le lo dō.*

I do not lend it you, *non velo presto*, or, *non le lo presto.*

* For greater Civility, and to render the Speech more agreeable, the *Italians* frequently turn the Expression, and use the third Person Singular of the Verb instead of the second; with *Vossignoria*, which is always wrote by *V. S.* As, You are in the right of it, *V. S. hà ragione*, and not *havete ragione*. And to avoid the frequent Repetition of *V. S.* the Personal Pronouns *ella* or *lei* are made use of in all their Cases, *viz.* Nom. *elle, ella*, Gen. *delle, di lei*, Dat. *à lui, le*, Act. *elle, lei, la*, Abl. *d'ella, da lei*; and in the Plural Number. *le signorie loro, delle signorie loro, alle signorie loro, dalle signorie loro.*

R U L E II.

Personal Pronouns are put after the Verb in the Imperative and Infinitive Moods, also with a Participle; but if the Imperative Mood be a Negative, the Pronoun is put before the Verb, and the Negative *non* begins the Sentence: And *nois*, the last Vowel of the Infinitive Mood is taken away before Pronouns.

Ex. Shew it me, *mostrate me lo*, or, *mostrami*
V. S.

For to give it you, *per darvelo*.

Having seen it, *havendo lo veduto*.

Do not tell it me, *non-melo dite*.

R U L E III.

In a Question, if there be but one Personal Pronoun, it is seldom expressed, and the Sound of the Voice rather shews the Question.

Ex. Does he go? *va egli?*
Is he gone? *è andato?*

R U L E IV.

In a Question, *It*, and the Pronouns which are put before the Verb in *French*, are in the like manner put before the Verb in *Italian*; and the Pronoun after the Verb is not expressed, if there be a Negative, *non* is put at the Beginning.

Ex.

Pronouns

Ex. Does he lend it me? *me lo presta?*
Does he not lend it me? *non me lo presta?*

A Rehearsal of the foregoing Rules

1. I lend it you, *ve lo presto.*
2. I do not give it you, *non ve lo do.*
3. Do I lend it you? *ve lo presto?*
4. Do not you lend it me? *non me lo prestate?*
5. Give it me, *datelo.*
6. Do not give it me, *non me lo date.*
7. Does he go? *va egli?*
8. Is he or the gone? *è andato? M. andato? F.*
9. I come to see you, *veggo a vederla, or vederla?*
10. Having seen him, *havendo lo veduto.*

R U L E V.

When the Participle Common denotes the Time past, it is always put the last of the Sentence, except it be an Adverb.

Ex. I have never seen him, *non l'ho mai veduto.*
I have known him very well, *l'ho cognosciuto benissimo.*

R U L E VI.

The Participle Common bearing Relation to a Noun before mentioned, and also coming after *who,*

who, whom, he, she, him, her, them, is put in the same Gender and Number as the Nouns and Pronouns.

Ex. The Beauty is dead, *la bella è morta*.
Have you seen her? *l' avete veduta, or vista?*
The Gentleman is come, have you seen him? *il Gentiluomo è venuto, l' avete visto?*

R U L E VII.

What, and *which*, in a Question are expressed by *che*.

What, or *which*, being turned by *that which*, governing the Verb, is *cio che*, or *quel che*; but if it relates to what goes before, they are expressed by *il che*.

That which, governed by the Verb, is *quel che*.

Ex. Which Man, *che uomo*.
What News, *che nuovo*.
What do you? *che fate?*
At what do you play? *a che giocate?*
What is written, is written, *quel ch'è scritto, è scritto*.
I have heard of your Misfortune, which afflicts me, *ho sentito della vostra sventura, il che m' affanna*.

R U L E

Pronouns

RULE VIII.

This and *That*, before Nouns, are expressed in this way:

This.

That.

Singular.

Singular.

* *questo* M. *quel* M. *quello* before S and a Con-
questa F. *quella* F. [sonant]

Plural.

Plural.

questi M. *quelli, quei, quegli* M.
queste F. *quelle* F.

This, before the Time of the Day, is *sto* M.
sta F.

That, between two Verbs, either expanded or understood, is *che*.

That alone is *questo*; or if *That* begins the Discourse, it is *cio*.

That, turned by *who*, is *chi*; in a Question *chi*.

That, turned by *whom*, is *che*.

Ex. *This* Man, or Thing, *questo huomo*, or, *questo*
qui.

This Woman, or Thing, *questa*, or, *questa qui*.

This Morning, *sta mane*.

I believe I shall go, *crede ch' andrò*.

Give me that, *datemi questo*.

That Woman that was here, and that you saw,
quella donzella ch'era, qui e che vedeste.

Questo is used in shewing the Thing near at hand,
quel in shewing or speaking of a Thing at a Distance.

RULE

R U L E IX.

This, That, in Comparison, or relating to a Noun before going, are expressed in this wise:

<i>This.</i>	<i>That.</i>
Singular.	Singular.
<i>questo, cotesto M.</i>	<i>quel, quello M.</i>
<i>questa, cotesta F.</i>	<i>quella F.</i>
Plural.	Plural.
<i>questi, cotesti M.</i>	<i>quelli, quei, que', quegli M.</i>
<i>queste, coteste F.</i>	<i>quelle F.</i>

Ex. This Ring is better than that Ring, *questo anello è miglior di quell anello.*

That time and this time are two, *quel tempo e questo sono duoi.*

R U L E X.

This, That, without Nouns, in Comparison, and in reference to a Noun before mentioned, are also thus turned:

<i>This.</i>	<i>That.</i>
Singular.	Singular.
<i>questo M. questa F.</i>	<i>quel, quello M. quella F.</i>
<i>*costui M. costei F.</i>	<i>colui M. colei F.</i>
Plural.	Plural.
<i>questi M. queste F.</i>	<i>quelli, quei M. quelle F.</i>
<i>costoro M. F.</i>	<i>coloro M. F.</i>

* For the use of *questi*, see Page 32.

Ex. This is honest, (speaking of a Woman) and that is naught, *questa è honesta, e quella cattiva.*

This Book and that are the best, *questo libro e quel sono i migliori.*

R U L E X I.

That, being in Comparison, or relating to another Noun before mentioned, is expressed in this wise :

That.
Singular.

Those.
Plural:

quel, quello M.
quella F.

quelli, quegli M.
quelle F.

Ex. This Picture is better than that of the other Room, *quell ritratto è miglior di quel dell'altra camera.*

R U L E X II.

He who, she who, are expressed by *chi*.

Ex. He who loves me follows me, *chi mi ama, mi segue.*

Note, If *who* or *that*, do not immediately follow the Pronoun, but are relative thereto in the same Sentence, *He* is expressed by *colui*, or, *egli* *she*; *She* by *colei*, or, *ella* *che*; the Plural *they* *whom*, &c. by *chi*, or, *coloro* *che*.

Ex. She is wise that keeps the House, *i. e.* stays at Home, *colei è savia che si tiene in casa.*

R U L E



RULE XIII.

They, is frequently in *Italian* expressed by *si*, and the Verb that follows is most commonly the third Person Singular, unless the Noun that follows be of the Plural Number, in which case the Verb is also put in the Plural Number; and *note*, that this Pronoun *si* may be put before or after the Verb indifferently.

Ex. They say, *si dice*, or, *dicesi*; they speak, *si parla*, or, *parlasi*.

They say things, *si dicono cose*.

The *Relative* Conjunction, *che*, *il*, *gli*, *vi*, *vi*, are placed before *they* in *Italian*; but *loro* them is put after the Verb.

Ex. They tell me, *mi si dice*; they tell them, *si dice loro*.

The Articles *him*, *it*, *her*, *them*, &c. are not expressed after the Particle *si*.

Ex. They say it, *si dice*, and not *si lo dice*.

They believe them, *si credano*, and not *si credano loro*.

The Verb *to have*, with a Participle Common coming after *they*, is turned by *to be*, and agrees with the Noun that follows.

Ex. They have taken many Ships, *si sono prese molte navi*.

They

They not, is expressed by *non si*.

Ex. They do not speak, *non si parla*.

They not of it, is expressed by *non sene*.

Ex. They do not talk of it, *non sene parla*.

They us of it, they you of it, they him of it, &c. with a Verb, the Verb is turned to the Participle Common, and the Verb *essere* or *venire* is put before the Participle in all the Tenses.

Ex. They speak to us of it, *cene vienne parlato*.

They speak to him of it, *gliene vien parlato*.

They promise me some, *meno sono promessi*, or,
mene vien promesso.

Note here, The Verb *venire* is more elegantly used than *essere*.

Note also, I. When the Conjunctive Pronouns come after the Particle *si*, and the Verb that follows has neither Noun or Case after it, the Phrase must be changed, and *si* not expressed.

Ex. They ask for me, *sono domandato*; I am asked for.

They seek you, *siete cercato*; you are sought for.

They will praise us, *saremo lodati*; we shall be praised.

II. *Si* they, or, it is, takes not *del*, or other Article after it, unless *del* signifies concerning.

Ex. They see Men, *si vedono huomini*.

They speak of War, *si parla della guerra*.

H

Farther,

Farther, *They* is expressed in this wise :

They gave me a Book, *mi fù data un libro* ; a Book was given to me.

They wrote us a Letter, *ci fù scritta una lettera* ; a Letter was wrote to us.

They sent for us to Rome, *summo mandati à Roma* ; we were sent for to Rome.

Also Remark, when *si* they, is put after a Verb that is accented, the Letter *s* is doubled, and the Accent taken away ; as,

Fassi for *si fà*, they do.

Dirassi for *si dirà*, they will say.

R U L E XIV.

The *Italians*, as well as the *French*, always repeat the Noun, of which they have spoken before, but to avoid tedious repetitions, they make use of the Personal Pronouns *io* M. *la* F. *lo* Plur. M. and F. also *vi* and *ne* ; the three first go with the Verb *sono* I am.

Ex. He is poor, I am so too, *è povero, lo sono anch' io.*

Vi us, and *ci* you, are both Personal Pronouns, and also Adverbs ; and in *Italian* are put for *by it, by them, in it, to it, to them, on it, on them, there, thither, therein, and thereunto.* Vide Table of Pronouns, and Page 47.

Ex. I get by it, *vi guadagno.*

She reads in it, *vi legge.*

Go you thither, *andate vi.*

Thou hast dined there, *ci* or *vi* hai pransato.

We are there, *ci siamo.*

Pronouns.

77

Ne also is a Personal Pronoun, and an Adverb, and with Verbs is put for *of, from, to, at him, her, it, them, for it, some, any, hence thence, &c.* Vid *Table of Pronouns*, and *Page 48.*

Ex. I have some, *ne hò.*

Will you have any? *ne volete?*

I receive from her, *ne recevo.*

What do you say to it? *che ne dice?*

In promising them some, *promittendone loro.*

R U L E X V.

Of whom, whose, are expressed by *di chi* or *di cui*, but if the Article *the* follows *of whom*, &c. we put *il di cui*, or *il cui*, M. *la di cui*, *la cui* F. Sing. *i di cui*, or *i cui* M. *le di cui*, or *le cui* M. Plur.

Ex. Whose Name I know not, *di chi*, or, *il di cui nome non sò.*

Whose Beauties, *le cui bellezze*, or, *le di cui bellezze.*

From whose Brother I have received, *dal cui*, or, *dal di cui fratello hò ricevuto.*

The Favours of whom, *i di cui favori.*

R U L E X V I.

Of whom, and *to whom*, in a Question, are expressed by *da chi* and *a chi*.

Ex. Of whom do you know it? *da chi lo sapete?*

To whom do you speak? *a chi parlate?*

R U L E XVII.

What, and That, are always che.

Ex. What news is stirring? *che si dice di nuovo?*
 What do they say Abroad? *di che si parla?*
 The Book that I read, *il libro che leggo.*

Note, I. *Che* sometimes signifies *because*, especially when after the Negative *non*.

Ex. Do not drink it, because it will hurt you, *non lo bevete, che vi farà male.*

II. *He that*, is expressed by *chi*, rather than *quel che*.

Ex. He that says this has reason, *che dice questo hà ragione.*

* * Before I conclude this Chapter, it will be proper to add a few Remarks.

I. Whereas the Pronouns *mi* myself, *ti* thyself, *si* himself, &c. when joined to the Articles *lo*, *la* it, or *ne* of it, change the *i* into *e*; as, *melo* to me it, *tene* thee of it, *sene* himself of it, as is shewn, Page 29. So is it to be particularly noticed of the Pronoun *gli* to him, or her, that whenever it is joined to the above Articles, it takes the Letter *e* after it before the Article, and make *glielo* to him it, *gliene* to him of it, &c.

Ex. To give it to him, *per darglielo*, not *darglilo*.

To give it to her, *per dargliela*.

You

You shall give them to him, *glieli renderete.*
 You shall ask him for some, *gliene domandete.*
 You shall speak to him of it, *gliene parlerete.*

II. When a Pronoun Conjunctive, in *Italian*, is preceeded by *si*, it is or *they*; as, *they me, they thee, they him, &c.* the Pronouns *me, thee, him, &c.* are transposed, that is, put before the Pronoun Personal.

Ex. They tell me, *mi si dice*, not *si mi dice.*
 They tell thee, *ti si dice*, not *si ti dice.*
 They tell him, *gli*, or *le si dice.*

III. The following Words, *me some, or of it; thee some, or of it; him some, or of it; us some, you some, &c.* are expressed by *mene, tene, sene, gliene, cene, vene, &c.* Vide Page 29.

IV. *They us of it, they you of it, they him of it, they me of it, they thee of it, &c.* are frequently turned in the Expression in *Italian*, and rendered by the Verbs *essere* and *venire*.

Ex. They will speak to us of it, *say*, It will be spoken of to us, *cene sarà parlato.*
 They will write to you of it, *say*, You will be written to of it, *vene sarà scritto.*
 They speak to him of it, *gliene vien parlato.*
 They promise me some, *mene sono promessi.*
 See before Page 75.

CH A P. IV.

Of VERBS *and* PARTICIPLES.

R U L E I.

VERBS Reciprocal, or that take *myself*, *himself*, *herself*, &c. with them, require the Pronoun to be before them, and the Verb *have* is changed into the Verb *am*.

Ex. I make haste, *mi affretto*.
 He kills himself, *si ammazza*.
 He has wondered, *s'è maravigliato*.
 To raise himself, [*in the Infinitive*] *levarsi*.

R U L E II.

My, *thy*, *his*, *her*, *our*, *your*, *their*, before a Part of the Body, or the Word *Mind*, are turned by *myself*, *thyself*, *himself*, &c. and the Article *the* or *to the* is put before the Part expressed.

Ex. I wash my Hands, *mi lavo le mani*.
 The Wine makes his Head ake, *il vino gli fa mal al capo*.
 I kiss your Hands, *vi*, or, *le bacio le mani*.
 He has put to his Mind, *s'è messo nell'imaginazione*.

R U L E

R U L E I I I.

The *Italians* make use of the Verb Reciprocal, instead of the Verb Passive, which is put in the third Person, either Singular or Plural, as the Noun requires.

Ex. Things are doing slowly, *le cose si fanno piano.*
Books are sold, *si vendono libri*, or, *i libri si vendono.*

R U L E I V.

It is, it was, it has been, are turned by *è, era, fù*, and the other third Persons of the Verb *sono*.

Ex. It is Time, *è tempo.*
It is the Time, *è il tempo.*
It was five o' Clock, *erano le cinque bore.*
It is we, *fiamonoi.*

R U L E V.

He is a, she is a, are expressed by *è un M. è una F.* and by the third Persons of the Verb *sono* I am.

Ex. He is, a Man of Business, *è uomo d'affari.*
She is a fine brown Woman, *è bella bruna.*

R U L E V I.

They are, is expressed by *sono*, the third Person Plural of the Verb *essere* to be.

Ex. They are Soldiers, *sono soldati.*
They are good for nothing, *non sono buone.*

R U L E

R U L E VII.

It is, in speaking of the Weather, is expressed by *fa*, the third Person Singular of the Verb *fare*, and in a Question ; but otherways, if the Noun comes before the Verb, *it is* or *are*, are *è* or *sono*.

Ex. It is cold, *fa freddo*.

The Weather is hot, *il tempo è caldo*.

What Weather is it ? *che tempo fa ?*

The Streets are dirty, *le strade sono sporche*.

R U L E VIII.

Am, and its Tenses, before these four Qualities of the Body, *hot*, *cold*, *dry*, *hungry*, are expressed by the Verb *avere* to have ; *dry* is turned by thirst *sete* F. and *hungry* by hunger *fame* F.

Ex. I am cold, *ho freddo*.

I am dry, *ho sete*.

R U L E IX.

The *Italians* make use of the Verb *andare* to go, and the Verb following to be rendered by the Gerund in *do*, for Verbs of Motion, and the Verb *andare* is put in the same Tense that the Gerund ought to be.

Ex. I will accompany him, *anderò accompagnandolo*.

Verbs and Participles.

83

Stare to stand, is in like manner made use of for Words of Rest, with the Gerund in *do*, or an Infinitive with *à* or *ad* before it.

Ex. He studies, *stà studiando*, or, *stà à studiare*.

R U L E X.

The Verb *ought* is rendered by *dovere*.

Ex. I ought, or; must go, *devo*, or, *debbo andare*.

R U L E XI.

The Verb *may* or *can*, is rendered by *potere*.

Ex. May I speak? *posso io parlare?*
That you may, *lo potete*.

R U L E XII.

The Particle *should*, in laying an Obligation or Duty, is turned by *ought*; *doverei*, *doveresti*, *doverebbe*, *doveremmo*, *dovereste*, *doverebbero*.

Ex. You should go to see him, *dovereste andar à vederlo*.

R U L E XIII.

Might, implying a Power, is expressed by *potere*, *poterei*, *potresti*.

Ex. He prayed me he might come, *me pregò che potesse venire*.

R U L E

34 Verbs and Participles. Ch. IV.

R U L E XIV.

The Definite Tense of Verbs, which is the third Tense of the Indicative Mood, is used in expressing an Action past, and in relating a Story.

Ex. I saw him yesterday, *lo viddi hieri.*

The King took *Namur*, *il Ré pigliò Namurco.*

R U L E XV.

The Indefinite Tense is turned by the Verbs *have* or *am*, and the Participle Common, when we express an Action from Morning to Midnight; and when *this* or *these* are before a Part of Time.

Ex. I saw him to-day, *l' hò veduto hoggi.*

R U L E XVI.

To, before an Infinitive, is expressed by *di*, after a Noun, or a Verb governing the Genitive or Ablative Case in *Latin*: And when we can turn *to* by *of* or *from*, and the Infinitive into a Participle in *ing*. *To* is also *da* after a Verb that governs an Ablative Case.

Ex. He is worthy to speak, *or*, of speaking, *è digno di parlare.*

She hinders me to go, *or*, from going, *m' impedisce d' andare.*

I am glad to see you, *hò gran gusto di vederla.*

R U L E

Verbs and Participles

89

R U L E XVII.

To, before an Infinitive, in *Italian*, is also rendered by *a* and *da*.

Ex. Let us go to walk, *anderémo a spasso*.
I have something to tell you, *hò qualche cosa da dirvi*.
It is to him to speak, *tocca à lui a' parlare*.
I have Trouble to do it, *hò pena da farlo*.

R U L E XVIII.

To, before an Infinitive, is expressed by *per*, when *to* has the Meaning of *for to*, or answers to the Question *why*.

Ex. I bought Cloth (*why? for*) to make me a Coat,
compro del panno per farmi un giacacorro.

R U L E XIX.

A Participle in *ing*, coming after Verbs, is changed into the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. I hear him crying, *l' intendo gridare*.

R U L E XX.

In, before a Participle in *ing*, is turned by *in*, or by *nel* with an Infinitive.

Ex. He choaked himself in eating, *si strangolo nel mangiare*, or, *mangiando*, or, *col mangiare*.

R U L E

R U L E XXI.

In, before Nouns of Number that denote a Part of Time, is expressed by *trà* or *frà*.

Ex. In three Hours, *frà tre hore.*

In ten Months, *trà dieci mesi.*

In fifteen Days, *frà quindici giorni.*

In, before Numerals that denote not the Time, is *in*.

Ex. In three Bottles, *in tre fiaschi.*

In a Garden, *in un giardino.*

R U L E XXII.

To know, when our Knowledge depends on the Senses is *conoscere*, when it arises from the Mind is *sapere*.

Ex. Is it long since you knew him? *è un pezzo che lo conoscete?*

Do you know this Dog? *conoscete questo cane?*

Do you know any News? *sapete niente di nuovo?*

Do you know to write? *sapete scrivere?*

R U L E XXIII.

In a Question, the Noun is put after the Verb as in *English*, and different from the *French* Tongue.

Ex.

Ex. Is the Gazette come ? *è la Gazzetta venuta ?*

Is the King returned ? *è il Re ritornato ?*

Note, sometimes the Noun is put before the Verb.

Ex. Are not the Sleeves too wide ? *le maniche non sono troppo larghe ?*

CHAP. V.

OF NOUNS, ADVERBS, PREPOSITIONS, &c.

RULE I.

THE Negatives *not*, *no*, are *non* ; and *nothing*, *never*, take *non* before the Verb, and *niente*, and *mai*, after the Verb : *No-body*, is *nessuno*.

Ex. I have no Money, *non hò danari.*

She has no Memory, *non hà memoria.*

She has nothing good, *non hà niente di buono.*

It will be nothing, *non sarà niente.*

I never saw a worse Beast, *non hò mai vista una più cattiva bestia.*

R U L E II.

Not, and *Na*, are always *Non*.

Ex. Yes, or no, *si, ou non*.

No Money no Swiss, *non quatrini non suizzeri*.

Not yet, *non ancora*.

R U L E III.

If the Negative *never* begins the Sentence, the Negative is put before the Verb, and the Pronoun that governs the Verb is not expressed.

Ex. Never did I see him, *mai non lo viddi*.

Nothing is so shameful, *niente è così vergognoso*.

R U L E IV.

Negatives in *Italian* are but rarely expressed double before the Infinitive Mood, as they are in *French*.

Ex. I pray you not to come; in *French*, it is said, *Je vous prie de ne pas venir*; in *Italian*, *ti prego di non venire*.

R U L E V.

The Verbs to *doubt not*, to *fear*, to *hinder*, take the Article *non* before the following Verb, which is put in the Optative Mood.

Ex.

Ex. I doubt not but he will come, *non dubito che non venga.*

I fear he will do it, *temo che non faccia.*

R U L E VI.

In Things contrary the one to the other in Comparison, *non* is put before the Verb that follows the Particle *che*.

Ex. I understand better than I speak, *intendo meglio che non parlo.*

It is colder than it was, *fa più freddo che non faceva.*

R U L E VII.

The Particle *but* takes *non* before the Verb, and *che* after the Verb.

Ex. I have but that, *non hò che questo*

R U L E VIII.

At, before *House*, or expressing the Dwelling one lives in, is expressed by *da*, or *in casa* with the Pronoun Possessive.

Ex. At my House, *da me*, or, *in casa mia.*

At thy House, *da te*, or, *in casa tua.*

At his, her, House, *da lui*, *da lei*, or, *in casa sua.*

At their House, *da loro* M. *da esse* F. or, *in casa loro.*

If *At* be followed by the Article *the*, or a Pronoun Possessive, *at* is expressed by *dal*, as in Chap. I. Rule 19. or by *in casa*, with the Articles of the Genitive Case.

Ex. At the Gentleman's, *dal Signor*, or, *in casa del Signor*.

At the Lady's, *dalla Signora*, or, *in casa della Signora*.

At the Scholar's, *dallo scolare*, or, *in casa dello scolare*.

At my Friend's, *dal mio amico*, or, *in casa del mio amico*.

At his Relation's, *da' suoi parenti*, or, *in casa de' suoi paernti*.

At my Sister's, *dalla sorella*, or, *in casa de' mie sorella*.

From, in the same Signification, is expressed in like manner.

Ex. From our House, *dalla casa nostra*.

R U L E IX.

As, *as*, being in a Sentence, are expressed by *quanto*, or *tanto* and *quanto*, or by *cosi* and *che*.

Ex. As well as you, *ben quanto voi*.

My Book is as handsome as yours, *il mio libro è bello quanto 'l vostro*.

Let's have our Supper as soon as possible, *fateci cenar quanto prima*.

R U L E

R U L E X.

The Particle *so* is turned by *così*.

Ex. I think so, *credo così*.

So great, *così grande*; so late, *così tardi*.

So, after the Verb *to believe*, is turned by *di sì*.

Ex. I believe so, *credo di sì*.

I believe I have, *credo di sì*.

I believe not, *credo di non*.

R U L E XI.

The Particles *a* or *an* are expressed by *uno*, which loses the letter *o* before a Noun Masculine, beginning with a Consonant; In like manner also *bello*, *quello*, *santo*, *buono*, are written *bel*, *quel*, *san*, *buon*, before Nouns Masculine; *grande* also before a Word which commences by a Consonant, or if it be of the Feminine Gender, is wrote *gran*, both Singular and Plural; if before a Vowel it is wrote *grand*.

Ex. I have a bad Game, *hò un cattivo giuoco*

Give me that Bottle and a Glass, *datemi quel flasco e un bicchiere*.

It is fine Weather, *fà bel tempo*.

Great Family, *gran familia*. Great Book, *gran libro*.

R U L E XII.

The Noun *Time* signifying the Weather, or the *Time* one lives in, is *tempo*: But when it signifies an *Occasion*, or *Opportunity*, it is *volta F.*

Ex. I pass my Time very well, *passo il tempo benissimo.*

Is it Breakfast-time? *è tempo di far colazioni?*

It will be for another Time, *sarà per un'altra volta.*

Note, *Time* is sometimes expressed by *via*.

Ex. Three times three are nine, *tre via tre sono nove.*

R U L E XIII.

People, being taken for the Inhabitants of a Kingdom or City, is *popolo*. If taken for some Particulars only, it is turned by *mondo*, or, *la gente*.

Ex. The People of England, *il popolo d'Inghilterra.*

There was much People, *v'era molta gente.*

R U L E XIV.

Just now, *presently*, are expressed by *adesso*, *adesso*.

Ex. I am going there just now, *mene vò la hora*, or, *adesso*, *adesso*.

I drank but just now, *ho' bevuto adesso*.

We will come presently, *adesso*, *adesso cen' andiamo.*

R U L E

R U L E XV.

Better, in Comparison, is *migliore*, and *than* that follows is *di*, but before Substantives, or a Pronoun Possessive *than* is rendered by the Article *del*; &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10.

Better, also with Verbs alone is *miglio*, and *than* which follows is turned by *che*.

Ex. This is better than that, *questo è migliore di quello*.

It is better late than never, *è meglio tardi che mai*.

R U L E XVI.

Long, before the Nouns, is *longo* M. *lunga* F. Sing. *longhi* M. *longhe* F. Plur. But *long* signifying a long Time is *longo tempo*, or, *un pezzo*.

Ex. This Table is too long, *questa tavola è troppo lunga*.

You stay long, *state lungo tempo*, or, *un pezzo*.

How long Time shall I stay? *quanto tempo mi tratterò?*

R U L E XVII.

The Particle *ago* after Parts of Time is expressed by *è* or *sono*.

Ex. How long ago, *quanto tempo è?*

How many Hours ago, *quanto hore sono?*

R U L E

R U L E X V I I I.

1. *Prepositions take che after them before a Verb, and without che require the Verb to be put in the Infinitive Mood.*

Ex. After I saw you, *doppo che vi viddi*
After having seen you, *doppo haver vi vedute.*

Exception. The Preposition *before* with Verbs, when signed by *vanti* or *innanzi* or *prima*, take *che* before the Optative Mood, and *di* without *che* before the Infinitive.

Ex. Before I see you, *prima che vi veda.*
Before you speak, *prima di parlarvi.*

R U L E X I X.

The Particle *since*, signifying a Part of Time is *doppo*; *since* is also expressed by *da che*, *poi che* or *già che*.

Ex. Since your return, *doppo la vostra venuta.*
Since you was here, *da che eravate qui.*
Since it is so, *già che sià così.*

R U L E X X.

About, when with the word *Clock*, and *it is*, is expressed by *in circa* or *intorno al* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10. And the Verb *it is*, is put in the third Person Plural.

Ex. It is about eight 'o Clock, *sono le otto hore in circa.*

It is about five 'o Clock, *sona intorno alle cinque hore.*

R U L E

R U L E XXI.

About, with the word *Clock*, and without the Verb *it is*, is expressed by *fu' l M. fu la F. fu le P.* before a part of the Day.

Ex. He was here at one 'o Clock, *era quì fu le un hora.*
I saw him about ten 'o Clock, *lo viddi fu le diéci*
hore ; about noon, *fu' l mezzzo di.*

R U L E XXII.

About, signifying *Round about*, is expressed by *d' intorno al* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule. 19.

Ex. Run about the gardens, *correte d' intorno al giardino.*

He runs about the Chamber, *corre intorno alla camera.*

There is a crowd about her, *v' è una calca d' intorno a ella.*

R U L E XXIII.

About, signifying *near*, and before Nouns, is *appresso del* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 10. And before Pronouns and proper Names *about* is *appresso di.*

Ex. About the fire, *appresso del fuoco.*

About, or near her, *appresso di ella.*

R U L E XXIV.

About, after the Verb *am*, and expressing the Thing we are doing, is *dietro.*

Ex. I am about it, *sono dietro.*

R U L E

R U L E XXV.

About, before a Participle in *ing* is *dietro à*, and the Participle is put in the Infinitive Mood.

Ex. I am about buying some Cloth, *sono dietro à comprare del panno.*

He is about removing, *è dietro à levare gli alloggiamenti.*

R U L E XXVI.

About, signifying *concerning*, is expressed by *di*, or *del* as in Chap. I. Rule 10.

Ex. I speak about your business, *parlo de' vostri negotio.*

They speak about you, *si parla di voi.*

They talked about affairs of State, *si parlava degli affari di stato.*

About, signifying *upon*, is *sopra*.

Ex. I have no money about me, *non ho danari sopra me.*

About, signifying *towards*, is *verso*.

Ex. He lives about the Tower, *egli abita verso la torre.*

About, signifying *near* or in the neighbourhood, is *vicino al &c* as in Chap. I. Rule 19.

Ex. It is near the Strand, *è vicino alle Strand.*

About;

About, is expressed by *in circa*, and the Verb put in the third Person.

Ex. It is about two Years, *sono due anni in circa*.

About, before Nouns of Number is also expressed by *dà*.

Ex. A man about fifty Years old, *un uomo attemptato da cinquanta anni*.

Whereabout, is *dove*, whereabout is it? *dove è?*

Thereabout, is *poco appresso*; a hundred pounds, or thereabout, *cento lire. o poca appresso*.

R U L E XXVII.

About, signifying *to*, is *d*; but before Nouns and Pronouns is *al* &c. as in Chap. I. Rule 19.

About, signifying *thereabout*, or the neighbouring Country, is expressed by *i*, *de'*, *a' i contorni*.

Ex. Go about your business, *andate a' negotii vostri*.

I saw York, and thereabout, *i. e.* the neighbouring Country, *viddi York, ed i contorni*.

From the Country, and thereabout, *della or, dalla campagna, e da' or, dei contorni*.

R U L E XXVIII.

The Prepositions *in*, or *into*, are turned by *in*, after Verbs of Motion, or Rest; Also after the definite or Tenses past *in* is *in*: After the Future Tense *in* is expressed by *frà*. [before Numbers and Parts of Time.] *Within* is also expressed by *frà* in this last sense, otherwise *within* is expressed by *in* also.

Ex.

Ex. He is in Italy, *e in Italia.*

He waits for you in your chamber, *l'aspetta in camera.*

She goes into Spain, *ella va in Spagna.*

They say he will go to [into] Flanders, *si dice ch'anderà in Fiandra.*

He went in ten days into Germany, *andò in dieci giorni in Germania.*

She will return in fifteen Months, *ritornerà frà quindici mesi.*

R U L E XXIX.

The *Italians* make use of the Future Tense after the Particle *se if*, when an Action that is to happen or come to pass, is intended, otherwise *se if* governs indifferently the Indicative or the Optative Mood; but the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood is always changed to the second Imperfect of the Optative in this sense, *i. e.* If we speak of the Time past, the Verb is put in the Imperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood; if, of the Time to come, the second Imperfect of the Optative Mood is used.

Ex. If you come to morrow, *se verrete domani.*

If he comes we shall see him, *se verrà lo vedremo.*

If you say true, *se dite vero.*

If I had Money they have robbed me of it, *se havevo danari mi sono stati rubbati.*

If I had money I would lend none, *se havessi danari non ne presterei.*

R U L E XXX.

Good, being an Adjective, is *buono M. buona F.* but *good* taken Substantively is *bene*.

Ex.

Ex. That is good, *ciò è buono.*

It is for your good, *è pe' l' vostro bene.*

This Rain does much good, *questa pioggia fa del bene.*

R U L E XXXI.

The Particle *very* is expressed by *bene*, or by *molto*: Also *very much* is turned by *gran* or *grande*.

Ex. I am very sorry, *mi dispiace molto.*

He has very much Spirit, *ha grande spirito.*

Very, before an Adjective, is turned by *most*, and the Adjective put in the Superlative degree.

Ex. It is very fine, *è bellissimo.*

R U L E, XXXII.

The Word *Clock*, in *Italian* as well as in *French*, is expressed by *Hour*, but in *Italian* the Verb is put in the same Number as *Hour*, and takes the Article *le* before the Number.

Ex. It is half an hour past five 'o Clock, *sono le cinque bore e mezza.*

An hour and three quarters, *un' hora e tre quadranti.*

R U L E XXXIII.

This Day *Sen'night*, *this day* *fort'night* &c. are turned by *from to day in eight* &c. and the Article is put before the Number.

K

Ex.

Ex. We will come this day Sen'night, *andiamo d'oggi à gli otto.*

Tuesday fortnight, *di martedì à li quindici.*

R U L E XXXIV.

A great deal is expressed by *molto*, and sometimes by *grande*.

I think she has a great deal of Wit, *credo c'habbia molto spirito.*

I have had a great deal of pain, *bà havuto gran pena.*

A great deal of pleasure, *gran piacere.*

He has a great deal of Spirit, *bà grande, or molto spirito.*

A little of is expressed by *un poco di*.

Ex. A little bread, *un poco di pane.*

A little of Compassion, *un poco di pietà.*

R U L E XXXV.

When the Word *qual* what, not in a Question comes before a Verb, the Verb is put in the Optative Mood.

Ex. I know not what is his Intention, *non sò qual sia l'intento suo.*

R U L E XXXVI.

Here, is turned by *quì* with Verbs of Rest, or when near at hand ; by *quà* with Verbs of Motion, or when at more distance.

Ex. He is here, *è quì* ; come here, or hither *venete quà.*

R U L E

R U L E XXXVII.

Infinitives, Gerunds, and the Adverb *ecco* there, always take the Articles *lo, la, li, le*, after them, and the Infinitive Mood loses its last vowel.

Ex. To see him, *per vederlo*, not *per lo vedere*.
I shall be very glad to know him, *mi farebbe
core di conoscerlo*.
Seeing her, *vedendola*.
There they are, *eccoli*.

R U L E XXXVIII.

To go, when it means to see a Person, is expressed by *venire* and not *andare*.

Ex. I will go to your House too morrow, *verrò da voi domani*.

Note, when to go is expressed by *andare* and an Infinitive follows, the Prepositions *a* or *ad* must be put before the Infinitive; the same also before other Verbs of Motion.

Ex. Let us go see, *andiam a vedere*.

Come see, *venite a vedere*.

Let us send to tell, *mandiamo a dire*.

R U L E XXXIX.

The Infinitive Mood of Verbs is used when we forbid a Person to do a thing.

Ex. Do not thou do that, *non fare questo*.

Say thou nothing, *non dire niente*.

R U L E

R U L E XL.

In my, in thy, in his, in her, are expressed by *nel* as in Chap. I. Rule 7.

Ex. In my garden, *nel mio giardino.*
 In thy book, *nel tuo libro.*
 In her Chamber, *nella sua camera.*
 In his Chambers, *nelle sue camere.*

R U L E XLI.

All or every are expressed by *tutto* M. *tutta* F. Sing. *tutti* M. *tutte* F. Plur. And also by *ogni*, which is only used in the Singular Number both Masc. and Feminine, and is joined to the following Word, beginning either with a Vowel or Consonant.

Ex. The whole Earth, *tutta la terre.*
 All the Women, *tutte le donne.*
 All or every Scholar, *ogni scolare.*
 For every thing, *per ogni cosa.*

R U L E XLII.

More, or more of, are expressed by *maggior* when *more* can be turned by *greater*.

Ex. With more boldness, *con maggior ardire.*
 We must have more courage, *bisogna havere maggior anima.*

More, when it signifies a greater Number, is *maggior numero di.*

Ex. We must have more Soldiers, *bisogna havere maggior numero di soldati.*

More

Prepositions, &c.

103

More than, with a word of Time, is *più* at the end of the Phrase.

Ex. It is more than ten Years, *sono dieci anni e più.*
More than an hour, *un' hora e più.*

R U L E XLIII.

So that, or *in that manner* is expressed by *che*.

Ex. I will do it so that you shall be contented, *farò che sarete contento.*

R U L E XLIV.

Much, in Comparison, is often expressed by *via*.

Ex. Much more learned, *via più-dotto.*

R U L E XLV.

Like, is expressed sometimes by *da*; upon the faith is expressed also by *da*.

Ex. You speak like a friend, *V. S. parla da amico.*
Upon the faith of an honest man, *da galant'buono.*

R U L E XLVI.

The Words *long of*, *as far as*, are rendred by *per*.

Ex. It is not long of me, *non resta per me.*
As far as I see, *per quel che vedo.*

R U L E XLVII.

To be sick, or *ill*, before Part of the Body, is expressed by *dolere*, which is made then a Verb Impersonal, and put only in the third Person singular.

K 3

Ex.

Ex. I have the head ach, *mi duole la testa.*
 They have the head ach, *duole loro la testa.*

R U L E XLVIII.

After that, before the Verb *am* and a Participle Common, is *che* after the Participle, which is put at the beginning.

Ex. After that he had seen, *veduto c' hebbe.*

Am, and its Tenses, before an Infinitive Mood is expressed by *dovere*, or, by *essere per*.

Ex. I was to go, *dovevo andare, or ero per andare.*

R U L E XLIX.

Being, before a Participle Common, is not expressd.

Ex. The time being come, *venuto il tempo.*
 Being astonisht at it, *meravegliatosene.*

R U L E L.

To *bring*, when it means a thing we cannot carry, is *menare*, a thing we can carry, is *portare*.

Ex. Bring the Horse to the Stable, *menate il cavallo alla stala.*

Bring me some Beer, *portatemi della biera.*

R U L E LI.

Do, *does*, are not expressd in *Italian* unless they be turned by the Verb *to make*; And when used to enquire after Health, *do* &c. is turned by the Verb *fare*. See the Examples Chap. 3. Rule 4.

Ex.

- Ex.* What do you want? *che cerca V. S.?*
 How do you do? *come stà V. S.*
 How does your Brother, *come stà il suo fratello?*

R U L E LII.

From, before a Participle ending in *ing*, is turned by *da*, and the Participle put in the Infinitive Mood.

- Ex.* He hinders me from studying, *m'impedisce da studiare.*

From whom, from which are expressed by *da chi*.

- Ex.* The Man from whom I know it, *l'uomo da chi lo so.*

R U L E LIII.

Having, before the Participle Common, is not expressed in *Italian*.

- Ex.* Having done it, *fattolo*.
 Having seen him, *vedutolo*.

R U L E LIV.

Than, with Nouns or Pronouns alone in Comparison, is *di*, as is before mentioned Rule 15. but with Verbs Adjective, or an Adverb, or between two Substantives, *than* is expressed by *che*, which sometimes takes *non* before the Verb that follows; see Rule 6.

- Ex.* More learned than Cicero, *più dotto di Cicerone*.
 The Professor is more eloquent than me, *il Professore è più eloquente di me.*

More

More poor than rich, *più povero che ricco.*

He writes more than he speaks, *scrive più che non parla.*

Virgil pleases me more than Ovid, *Virgilio mi piace più che Ovidio.*

GRAMMAR. R U L E LV.

Than, after a Comparative, and followed by an Article, or Pronoun Possessive, as, *than the, than my, than his, than their* &c. is expressed by the Article *del* as in Chap. I. Rule. 10.

Ex. More white than the snow, *più bianca della neve.*

More contented than the King, *più contento del Re.*

Less rich than my neighbour, *meno ricco del mio vicino.*

Bigger than my hand, *più larga della mia mano.*

Note, If the Pronoun Possessive be in the Plural Number, the Articles *de* and *delle* are used for *than*.

Ex. He is handsomer than his sisters, *egli è più bello delle sue sorelle.*

More powerful than my brothers, *più potenti de miei fratelli*; than their Highnesses, *delle Altezze loro.*

R U L E LVI.

How Old, is expressed by *Years*, and the Verb *are* by the Verb *have* *hanno*.

Ex. How old are you? *quanti anni hà?*

R U L E LVII.

There, before Verbs is not exprest, and the Verb agrees with the Noun following.

Ex. There came many Lords, *vennero molti Signori.*

R U L E LVIII.

Will turned by *shall*, is the mark of the Future Tense, otherwise it is a Verb.

Ex. Will you come with me, *volete venire meco.*

R U L E LIX.

The Adverbs *till*, *untill*, may be exprest by *che quando*.

Ex. We know not what health is till we are sick,
non si sà cosa sia sanità che quando si sta ammalato.

R U L E LX.

How, and *what*, before a Note of Admiration is exprest by *O*.

Ex. How happy should I be if I understood it, !

O me felice se la sapessi !

What white hands she has ! *O che belle mani bà !*

How, is also exprest by *quanto*,

Ex. How weary am I of laying in bed ! *quanto mi rincresce lo stare in letto !*

R U L E LXI.

To live, meaning the place of our Residence, is exprest by the Verb *stare*

Ex.

Ex. Where does he live, *ove stà di casa?*
He lives hard by, *stà quì vicìno.*

R U L E LXII.

The Particle *something*, between two Verbs is not expressed.

Ex. Give me something to drink, *dàtemi a bere.*

R U L E LXIII.

All over, is expressed by *per tutto*.

Ex. I have pains all over my body, *sento dolóri per tutta la vita.*

R U L E LXIV.

The Verb *must* is expressed by *bisognare* to be-
hoove, and the Verb following is put in the In-
finitive Mood.

Ex. You must take courage, *bisogna fare animo.*
You must not fear, *non bisogna temere.*

Ex. You must be careful, *bisogna stare attento.*

Ex. You must be quick, *bisogna stare presto.*

Ex. You must be slow, *bisogna stare lento.*

Ex. You must be strong, *bisogna stare forte.*

Ex. You must be weak, *bisogna stare debole.*

Ex. You must be rich, *bisogna stare ricco.*

Ex. You must be poor, *bisogna stare povero.*

Ex. You must be happy, *bisogna stare contento.*

Ex. You must be sad, *bisogna stare triste.*

Ex. You must be angry, *bisogna stare furioso.*

Ex. You must be calm, *bisogna stare tranquillo.*

Necessary Remarks

I. The *Italians* in discourse, and in their Writings often make use of Particles, tho' they at the same time have no real signification, but are judged necessary to give more strength and elegance to the Phrase; the more common are *di, mi, ne, se, si, ti, per, già, così, ben, ed* &c. and of which take the following Examples,

Ex. To run after the Hare, *correr di dietro alla lepore*,
I know what I say, *so quello che mi dite*.

They remain quiet after supper, *dopo cena senza stattersi dritti*.

Let us go and live in an other Country, *andiamos a stare in un' altro paese*.

He believes he has gained, *si è creduto d' aver vinto*.

I thought to have found you awake, and you slept, *mi ero creduto trovarti svegiato, e ti dormivi*.

The business goes so, *la cosa andò per così*.

At present they are disposed to come, *brasono pur già disposti a venire*.

What did you do after supper? *che si fece quì dopo cena?*

The Poets especially take great liberty in adding or retrenching Words at pleasure; as *legàro* for *legàrono*, *amàro* for *amàrono*, *de lo* for *dello*, *ne la* for *nella*, which will be found by practice and reading the best Authors, who frequently write

vò for *voglio* I am willing.

potea for *poteva* he was able.

opre

opre for *opere* work

prince for *principe* prince.

lettre for *lettere* letters.

fue for *fù* he was.

nui for *noi* us.

And the like will occur in many Instances: And indeed so frequent are the liberties taking by the *Italian* Poets that they may in some measure be said to have formed a language peculiar to themselves.

II. The Particles *ci* and *vi*, are Personal Pronouns when they signify *us* and *you*; When they signify *here*, *there*, *thither*, *at it* &c. as before mentioned in the *Table of Pronouns*, they are Adverbs of Place, and it would be proper to distinguish the different sense of these Words by marking them when Adverbs, *ci*, *vi*, but this is not in general observed by Authors.

Nè, also in like manner when accented is an Adverb.

Sì, also accented is an Adverb.

III. Adverbs are never put between the Pronoun and the Verb, but at the end of the sentence, as, I most humbly thank you, *vi*, or *la ringrazio humil-mente*.

Compos.

COMPOSITIONS;
OR,
LESSONS
ON THE
Foregoing RULES.

* * Observe in making your Compositions, that the Figures placed over the Words in the following Lessons, refer to the Figures placed at the bottom of each Lesson, which direct the Learner to the several RULES of the foregoing CHAPTERS, wherein the Peculiarities of the Italian Tongue are explained, and made familiar; the rest will be found in the Dictionary.

Let the Learner write out the English of these Compositions, with the References to the Rules, where noted; And having turned the English into Italian, according to the Directions he will here meet with, and the common Rules of Grammar, let him examine his Composition by the Italian: By this Practice, he will soon be acquainted with the Rules of this Grammar, and enabled to point out himself, those Words that require a particular Direction; And for this Purpose, some Lessons are here also given without any Reference; and the like he may continue (if necessary) to write from any easy Author in Italian and English.

After the Lessons are perfected, the Learner should get them by Heart, and take every Opportunity to discourse.

* * In Italian, it is not necessary to make use of the Pronouns Nominative to Verbs.

COMPOSITION. I.

GOOD morrow, Sir.

¹How ²do ³you ⁴do this morning.

¹I do ²very ³well ⁴to ⁵serve ⁶you.

¹I am ²glad ³to ⁴see ⁵you.

¹And ²I ³also ⁴you.

¹I am ²your ³Servant.

¹I most ²humbly ³thank ⁴you.

¹What ²news ³have ⁴you?

¹I have ²none, [³of ⁴it.]

¹What ²do ³they ⁴say ⁵in ⁶town?

¹They ²say ³nothing.

¹Will ²you ³drink ⁴a ⁵glass ⁶of ⁷wine?

¹No, ²I ³thank ⁴you.

¹I do ²not ³drink ⁴in ⁵the ⁶morning.

1. *do*, C. 5. R. 51.

2. *you*, C. 3. R. 1. *note*

3. *to*, C. 4. R. 1.

4. *you*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 2.

5. *am glad*, C. 4. R. 1.

6. *to*, C. 4. R. 16.

7. *I*, C. 3. R. 3.

8. *you*, C. 2. R. 3.

9. *your*, C. 2. R. 1.

COMPOSITION I.

BUON dì, or giorno Signóre.

Come state, or stà Vosignoría, mane.

Stò benissimo per servirvi, or servirla.

Mi rallegro di vedervi, or vederla.

Ed Io anche vi, or la.

Sono il vostro, or il suo servo.

Vi, or la ringrázio humilmense.

Che nuove havéte, or hà V. S?

Non ne hò.

Che si dice in città?

Non si dice niente.

Volete, or vuola V. S. bere un bicchiere di vino?

Non, vi, or la ringrázio.

Non beve la mattina.

10. you, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.

11. humbly, Page 110.

12. what, C. 3. R. 7.

13. none, &c. C. 3.

R. 4. 14.

14. they, C. 3. R. 13.

15. nothing, C. 5. R. 1.

16. will, C. 5. R. 58.

17. a, C. 5. R. 11.

18. no, C. 5. R. 2,

19. not, C. 5. R. 1.

20. in the, C. 1. R. 7,

COMPOSITION II.

- ¹ **D** ² O you ³ love beer?
³ I ⁴ love ⁵ wine ⁶ better ⁷ than ⁸ beer.
⁵ Have ⁶ you ⁷ any ⁸ beer ⁹ in ¹⁰ Italy?
⁷ We ⁸ have ⁹ more ¹⁰ wine ¹¹ than ¹² beer.
¹ Where ² do ³ they ⁴ sell ⁵ Wine?
⁸ They ^{8*} sell ⁹ it ¹⁰ at ¹¹ the ¹² Taverns.
¹⁰ If ¹¹ I ¹² go ¹³ to ¹⁴ Italy ¹⁵ should ¹⁶ I ¹⁷ find ¹⁸ there ¹⁹ good ²⁰ beer?
¹² You ¹³ would ¹⁴ find ¹⁵ bad ¹⁶ beer, ¹⁷ but ¹⁸ the ¹⁹ best ²⁰ wine ²¹ in ²² the
¹⁴ [¹⁵ world. ¹⁶]
¹⁴ I ¹⁵ thank ¹⁶ you ¹⁷ for ¹⁸ your ¹⁹ good ²⁰ advice.
¹⁴ An ¹⁵ I ¹⁶ thank ¹⁷ you ¹⁸ with ¹⁹ all ²⁰ my ²¹ heart ²² for ²³ your
¹⁹ [²⁰ demand, ²¹ or ²² question. ²³]
1. *do*, C. 5. R. 51. 10. *to*, C. 1. R. 21.
2. *you*, C. 2. R. 3. 11. *there*, p. 110, &c.
C. 3. R. 1. *note*. 12. *good, bad*, C. 1. R.
3. *beer*, &c. C. 1. R. 2. 16.
4. *better*, C. 5. R. 15. 13. *in the*, C. 1. R. 12.
5. *have you*, C. 3. R. 3. 14. *you*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
6. *any*, C. 1. R. 10. R. 1.
7. *more*, page 24. 15. *for*, C. 1. R. 10.
8. *they*, C. 3. R. 13. 16. *your, my*, C. 2.
8* *it*, Table of Articles, R. 1.
and C. 3. R. 4. 17. *with*, C. 1. R. 11.
9. *at the*, C. 1. R. 19. COM-

COMPOSITION II.

A *MATE*, or amà *V. S.* la biera?
Amo il vino mégljo che la biera.

Havéte della biera in Italia?

Habbiámo più di vino che di biera.

Dove s' vende il vino?

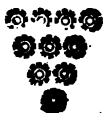
Si lo vende alle taverne.

S'è andávo in Italia, v'è trovereiio di buona biera.

*Troverete, or trovera V. S. di cattiva biera, mà il
 megljor vino del mondo.*

Vi, or la ringrázio del suo, or vostro buon auxiio.

*E la ringrázio di tutto 'l mio cuore della sua, or
 [vostra domanda.]*



COMPOSITION III.

¹ ² ³ ⁴
D ⁵ O you know that Gentleman?

⁶ ⁷ ⁸
 What Gentleman?

⁹ ¹⁰ ¹¹
 He who was with me here.

¹² ¹³ ¹⁴
 No, I do not know him

¹⁵ ¹⁶
 You have seen him many times.

¹⁷ ¹⁸ ¹⁹ ²⁰
 For all that, I do not know him.

²¹ ²² ²³ ²⁴
 What does he ask you?

²⁵ ²⁶
 He asks me some money.

²⁷ ²⁸ ²⁹
 If you have any lend it to him.

³⁰ ³¹
 I fear to lose it.

³² ³³ ³⁴ ³⁵
 If you fear to lose it, do not lend it to him.

³⁶ ³⁷ ³⁸ ³⁹ ⁴⁰
 He says that his Father will pay me.

1. *do, does*, C. 5. R. 51.

2. *you, he*, C. 3. R. 3.

3. *know*, C. 4. R. 22.

4. *that*, C. 3. R. 8.

5. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

6. *he who*, C. 3. R. 12.

7. *with me*, C. 1. R. 11.

8. *here*, C. 5. R. 36.

9. *no*, C. 5. R. 2.

10. *not*, C. 5. R. 1.

11. *him, you, me*, C. 2.

R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.

12. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

12* *some*, C. 1. R. 10.

COMPOSITION III

COnoscete, or conoscete V. S. quel gentilhuomo?
Che gentilhuomo?

Egli che era quì meco.

Non, non lo conosco.

L' havete veduto speffe volte.

Per tutta ciò non lo conosco.

Che vi, or le domanda?

Mi domanda quattrini.

Se ne havete prestate glieli.

Temo perderli.

Se temete perderli, non glieli prestate.

Dice che 'l suo padre mi pagherà.

13. *if*, C. 5. R. 29.

14. *any*, C. 3. R. 14.

15. *it to him*, C. 2.

R. 3. C. 3. R. 2. also
page 78. note.

it. C. 3. R. 4.

16. *lose*, C. 5. R. 37.

17. *that*, C. 3. R. 8.

18. *his*, C. 2. R. 1.

19. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

¹⁸ Is ²⁰ his ²¹ Father in town?

³ I ¹⁰ know not.

¹³ If ²² he ¹⁹ be there, I ¹¹ will ¹³ ask ¹⁹ him if he will pay

¹¹ me ²⁴ the money which I shall lend.

20. *father*, C. 4. R. 23. 23. *me*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.

21. *in*, C. 5. R. 28. R. 2.

22. *there*, page 110. *note*. 24. *which*, C. 3. R. 7.

COMPOSITION IV.

¹ I ² Went yesterday to a gentleman's, and I
³ wondered ⁴ to hear ⁵ that he was gone out,
⁶ [or] from home

⁷ What ⁸ a Clock ⁹ was it?

⁹ It ¹⁰ was ⁸ about seven a clock.

¹¹ It ¹² is not a wonder, because he ¹³ is a man of
³ business, and ¹⁴ rises betimes in the morning.

1. *went*, &c. C. 4. R. 14.

2. *to*, C. 5. R. 8.

3. *wondered*, *rises* C. 4.
R. 1.

4. *to*, C. 4. R. 16.

5. *that*, C. 3. R. 8.

6. *from*, C. 5. R. 8.

7. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

8. *clock*, C. 5. R. 32.

How

È il suo padre in città?

Non sò,

*Se ci sia, gli domanderò se vuol pagarmi i quattrini
che presterò.*

COMPOSITION IV.

A *Ndài hieri da un gentilbuomo, e mi mara-
vigliai di sentire ch' era uscito di casa.*

Che hora era?

Erano intorno alle sette hore.

*Non è maraviglia, perche è huomo d' affari, e se
leva da buon' hora la mattina.*

9. was it, C. 4. R. 4.

10. about, C. 5. R. 20.

11. it is, C. 4. R. 4.

12. not, C. 3. R. 4.

13. be it, C. 4. R. 5.

14. in the, C. 5. R. 2.

Come

[120]

How can he do it in the winter? when it is
[cold.]

He warms himself by [with] walking.

Sit down if you please.

Come near the fire.

I am not cold.

Will you drink something to cool yourself?

When I am hot I am hungry, and when I am
cold I am dry.

I cannot stay.

I must go.

I am to go to see a lady, who [that] is going
[goes] to-morrow into the country.

15. can, C. 4. R. 11.

16. it is, C. 4. R. 7.

17. by, C. 1. R. 11.

18. walking, C. 4. R. 19

19. sit down, pag. 67. note.

20. if, C. 5. R. 29.

21. you, C. 3. R. 1.

22. near, C. 5. R. 23.

23. am, C. 4. R. 8.

24. will, C. 5. R. 58.

25. you, C. 3. R. 3.

26. something, C. 5.
R. 62.

27. to, C. 4. R. 18.

28. yourself, C. 2. R. 6.
C. 3. R. 2.

29. am, C. 5. R. 48.

30. to go, C. 5. R. 38.

31. into the, C. 1. R. 20.

C O M-

Come può far egli l'inverno? quando fa freddo.

Si scalda co'l caminare.

Seda V. S. se le piace.

Si metta appreso del fuoco.

Non hò freddo.

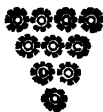
Volete bere per rinfrescarvi?

Quando hò caldo hò fame, e quando hò freddo hò sete.

Non posso stare.

Bisogna che vada.

*Devo andare a vedere una donna, che va domani
alla campagna.*



COMPOSITION V.

W^IHO is here ?
Give me² my³ ~~suit~~.

⁴There it is, Sir.

Bring² me³ my stockings.

Comb² my head [~~me~~].

Take⁵ an other Comb.

Give² me³ my handkercheif.

Here⁵ is a clean one, Sir.

Bring³ my breeches.

What⁶ suit⁷ will⁸ you wear to day ?

That⁹ [*which*]¹⁰ I wore yesterday.

Be quick, make² a fire, drefs me.

1. *here*, C. 5. R. 36.

2. *me*, C. 3. R. 2.

3. *my*, C. 2. R. 1.

4. *there*, C. 5. R. 37.

5. *an*, C. 5. R. 11.

6. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

7. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

8. *you*, Page, 67. *note*.

9. *that*, C. 3. R. 7.

10. *wore*, C. 4. R. 14.

There

COMPOSITION V.

CHI è quì?

Dàtemi la mia camìcia.

Eccola, signóre.

Portàtemi le mie calzétte.

Pettinàtemi.

Pigliàte un' altro pèrtine.

Dàtemi il mio fazzolétto.

Eccone un bianco, signóre.

Portàte i miei calzóni.

Che vestìto metterà V. S. oggi.

Quel che portàvo ièri.

Sù sù, presto, fate fuoco, vestìtemi.



There is a fire.

¹¹ What will you please to have, ⁸ Sir, or what will you, Sir?

¹² Some body knocks, see who it is.

¹³ Where are my slippers?

'T is, [¹⁴ or you have] well done.

11. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

13. *are*, C. 4. R. 23.

12. *some body*, C. 3. R. 13.

14. *well*, pag. 110. note 3.

COMPOSITION VI.

¹ **B** ² Ring us something to breakfast. ^{2*} ³

⁴ Lay a Napkin on that Table.

² Give us plates, knives and forks.

Rinse the glasses.

Give the gentleman ⁴ a Chair.

1. *bring*, C. 5. R. 50.

2* *something*, C. 5. R. 62.

2. *us, me*, C. 2. R. 3.

3. *to*, C. 4. R. 17.

C. 3. R. 2.

4. *a*, C. 5. R. 11.

C'è fuoco, signóre.

Che commándà V. S.?

Si picchia, vedéte chi è.

Ove sono le mie pianélle.

Avéte fatto bene.

COMPOSITION VI.

P*Ortáteci da far colazione.*

Mettéte una saluiétta sopra questa tâvola.

Dáteci tonàs, coltèlli forchétte.

Sciaquâte i bicchieri.

Date una sedia al signóre.

Sit down, Sir; sit by ⁵ [*near*] the fire.

⁶ I am ⁷ not cold, I am ⁸ very ⁹ well here.

¹⁰ Let's see if the wine be good.

² Give me ¹¹ that bottle, and ⁴ a glass.

¹¹ Pray taste that wine?

How do you like it? ¹² or does it please him?

¹³ What do you say to it?

¹⁴ 'Tis ⁷ not bad, ¹⁴ 'tis ¹⁵ very good.

Sir, your Health.

Sir, I thank you.

¹⁶ Give the gentleman ¹⁷ something to drink.

¹⁸ I have drank but just now.

5. *near*, C. 5. R. 26.

6. *am*, C. 4. R. 8.

7. *not*, C. 3. R. 2.

8. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.

9. *here*, C. 5. R. 36.

10. *is*, C. 5. R. 29.

11. *what*, C. 3. R. 8.

12. *it him*, C. 2. R. 3. 8.

Page, 78.

13. *to it*, C. 3. R. 14.

14. *'tis*, C. 4. R. 4.

15. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.

16. *something*, C. 5. R. 62.

17. *to*, C. 4. R. 17.

18. *just now*, C. 5. R. 14.

V. S. seda; si metta vicino al fuoco.

Non hò freddo, sono benissimo quì.

Vediámo se 'l vino è buono.

Dátemi quel fiasco, e un bicchiere.

De grazia, V. S. provi questo vino.

Che gliene pare?

Che ne dice?

Non è cattivo, è squisitissimo.

Alla sanità di V. S. Brindisi a V. S.

Ringrázio V. S.

Date a bere al Signóre.

Hò bevuto adéssò.



COMPOSITION VII.

¹ **D** ² O you speak Italian ?

³ I speak it a little.

¹ How ² do you ⁴ call this in Italian.

⁵ It is called, *or* ⁵ they call it.

¹ Do you ² learn to ⁶ speak Italian ?

Yes, Sir.

How do they ⁵ call ⁷ your master, *or* what is your master's name.

⁸ He calls himself, *or* his name is ***.

⁹ How long ² have you learned ?

¹⁰ I have learnt a month, six months, nine months,
¹⁰ a year.

² You speak well.

Never fear, the Italian language is not hard.

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| 1. <i>do, does</i> , C. 5. R. 51. | 7. <i>your</i> , C. 2. R. 1. |
| 2. <i>you</i> , C. 3. R. 1. <i>note</i> . | 8. <i>himself</i> , C. 2. R. 6. |
| 3. <i>it</i> , C. 3. R. 14. 1. | C. 3. R. 1. |
| 4. <i>this</i> , C. 3. R. 8. | 9. <i>how long</i> , C. 5. R. 16. |
| 5. <i>It is, they</i> , C. 3. R. 13. | 10. <i>a</i> , C. 5. R. 11. |
| 6. <i>to</i> , C. 4. R. 17. | |

Do

COMPOSITION VII.

P Arla V. S. Italiano?

Io lo parlo un poco.

Come chiàma V. S. questo in Italiano?

Si chiama.

Impara V. S. a parlar Italiano.

Si Signore.

Come si chiama il suo maestro.

Si chiama il Signor ***.

Quanto tempo hà V. S. imparato?

Hò imperato un mese, sei mesi, nove mesi.

V. S. parla bene.

Non temo V. S. la lingua Italiana non è difficile.

Impara

¹ Do ² you ¹¹ learn every day?

No Sir, I learn ¹² but ¹³ three ¹⁴ times a week.

On ¹⁵ what ¹ days ⁷ does ¹⁶ your master come?

¹⁷ Monday, ¹⁷ wednesday, ¹⁷ friday?

At ¹⁵ what ¹⁸ 'o clock?

At ¹⁸ ten o' clock.

11. *every*, C. 5. R. 41.

12. *but*, C. 5. R. 7.

13. *times*, C. 5. R. 12.

14. *a*, C. 1. R. 6.

15. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

16. *master*, C. 4. R. 23.

17. *monday*, &c. C. 1.
R. 1.

18. *clock*, C. 5 R. 32.

COMPOSITION VIII.

¹
A T. what game shall we play?

Let us make a party at picquet.

What ² [*how much*] will you play for?

Let's see who shall deal, or to whom it shall
happen to deal.

1. *what*, C. 3. R. 7.

2. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

You

Impara V. S. ogni giorno?

Signornd, non imparo che tre volte la settimana.

In che giorno viéne il suo maestro?

Il lunedì, il mercoledì, ed il venerdì.

A che ora?

Alle dieci ore.

COMPOSITION VIII.

A *Che giuoco faremo noi?*

Faciámo una partita a piquette.

Quanto voléte giuocárs?

Vediámo a chi toccherà a fare.

Tocc?

You are to deal. I am to deal.

Shuffle the Cards.

They are shuffled³ enough.

Cut, Sir.

I have⁴ a bad hand, or game.

Deal again^{5 6} if you please,

No, Sir, not this Time.

Have you all⁷ your Cards?

I believe I have⁸.

How many do you take⁹ [of them?]

I take¹⁰ all, I leave one⁹ [of them?]

Have you laid out?

Tell your⁷ point, fifty, sixty.

I have three Aces, three Kings, three Queens, and
three Knaves.

3. shuffled, C. 3. R. 6.

4. a, C. 5. R. 11.

5. if, C. 5. R. 29.

6. you, C. 3. R. 1.

7. your, C. 2. R. 1.

8. I have, C. 5. R. 10.

9. of them, C. 3. R. 14. 1.

10. all, C. 5. R. 41.

I have

Tocc' a voi. tocc' a me.

Mescoláte le carte.

Sono mescoláte a bastanza.

Alzáte, Signore.

Hò un cattivo giuoco.

A monte se le piace.

Signornd, per questa volta.

Avéte le vostre carte?

Credo di sì.

Quanto ne pigliáte?

Piglio tutto, ne lascio una.

Avéte scartáto?

Contáte il vostro ponto, cinquánda, sessánta.

Hò tre assi, tre rè, tre dame, e tre fanti.

I have as much, [⁹of them.]

¹¹
I have not as much.

I have lost, you have made a peek, a repeck.

You have won.

We are quits, or even.

^{12 4}
I owe you a Game.

11. not, C. 3. R. 1.

12. you C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
R. 1.

COMPOSITION XI.

¹
W Here is my Servant.

He is below.

^{2 3 1}
Ask him if he has been for my letters.

⁴
I believe not,

²
Tell him to go [*that he go*] directly.

^{5 6}
There are no letters for you.

1. my, C. 2. R. 1.

4. believe, C. 5. R. 10.

2. him, me, C. 2. R. 3.

5. there, see page 110. &c.

C. 3. R. 2.

6. you, C. 2. R. 6.

3. been, C. 3. R. 6.

Gave

Ne hò altretánte.

Non ne hò altretánte.

Hò perso, avéte fatto un pico, repico.

Avéte vinto, or guadagnáto.

Siámo pari.

Vi devo una partita.

COMPOSITION IX.

D *Ou' è 'l mio servo?*

E a basso.

Domandategli s' è andato per le mie lettere.

Credo di non.

Ditegli che vada adesso.

Non ci sono lettere per voi.

N

Dátemi

² ⁷ ⁷ ⁸
Gave me a sheet of paper, a pen, and a little Ink.

⁵ ⁹
There are no pens.

⁹
They are good for nothing.

¹⁰ ¹¹
There are some others.

They are not made.

¹²
Where is your penknife?

¹³ ¹⁴
Can you [*do you know to*] make pens?

¹⁵
I make them my own way.

¹⁶ ¹⁷
Will you read the gazette?

¹⁵ ¹⁵
I shall be glad of it, if you have it.

² ¹⁸ ² ²⁰
Oblige me to let me see it.

⁵ ⁸
There is nothing [*of*] new.

²¹
Who sends it you?

One of my friends,

- | | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| 7. a, C. 5. R. 11. | 14. pens, C. 1. R. 1. |
| 8. a little, C. 5. R. 34. | 15. them, it, C. 3. R. 1. |
| 9. no, nothing, C. 5. R. 1. | 16. will, C. 5. R. 58. |
| 10. there, C. 5. R. 37. | 17. you, C. 3. R. 3. |
| 11. some, C. 3. R. 14. | 18. to, C. 4. R. 16. |
| 12. your, C. 2. R. 1. | 19. me, C. 3. R. 2. |
| 13. can, i. e. know C. 4. | 20. it, C. 3. R. 4. |
| R. 22. | 21. it you, see pag. 29. |

*Dátemi un fóglio di carta, una penna et un poco d'
Inchióstro.*

Non vè sono penne.

Non sono buone, or non vágliono niénte.

Eccone altre.

Non sono temperáte.

Ou' è 'l vostro temperíno?

Sapête temperar 'le penne?

Le tempero a modo mio.

Volete legger la gazzetta.

L'averei caro, se l'aveste.

Favoritemi di farmela vedere.

Non ci è niénte di nuovo.

Che vela manda?

E un' amico mio.



I would have one [²²*of them*] also.

I will ask it for you.

You will oblige me much.

I will write to him too morrow Evening.

Do not [²⁶*you*] forget it.

I will remember it, or I will remember me of it.

22. *of them*, C. 3.
R. 14. &c.

24. *you*, C. 2. R. 5.
25. *me, to him*, C. 3. R. 1.

23. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

26. *you it, me of it*, see
pag. 28. 29.

COMPOSITION X.

¹ **W**hen will you ² come to me?
³ To morrow very early.

How have you passed the night?

Very badly, I have not slept.

I have had a [⁴*the*] fever all night?

I have [⁴*feel*] pains all over my body.

1. *will*, C. 5. R. 58.

3. *very*, C. 5. R. 31.

2. *you*, C. 2. R. 2.

4. *all*, C. 5. R. 41.

R. 3. C. 3.

You

Ne vorrei aver un' ancor' jo.

La chiederò per voi.

M' obliherete assai.

Gli scriverò domani sera.

Non vene scordate.

Mene ricorderò.

COMPOSITION X.

QUando mi verréte a trováre.
Dománi a buonissim'ora.

Come havéte passáto la notte?

Malaménte, non hò dormíto.

Hò avúto la febbre per tutta la notte.

Sento dolóri per tutta la vita.

⁵ You ⁶ must be let blood.

I have been blooded twice [*two times.*]

I am sorry for ⁷ it, *or* ⁷ it grieves ⁷ me.

⁸ Take care of yourself?

Who is able to bear ⁹ it?

I wonder the doctor is not come.

⁶ You must take courage, 'twill be ¹⁰ nothing.

¹⁰ I am not able to stir ⁸ [*myself.*]

Draw the Curtains.

¹¹ You have caught a violent cold.

I have had it this fort'night.

The wind is ~~changed~~.

¹² We shall have rain.

It will not rain to day.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 5. <i>you</i> , C. 2. R. 2. C. 3. | 9 <i>it</i> , C. 3. R. 2. |
| R. 2. | 10. <i>nothing</i> , <i>not</i> , C 5. R. 1. |
| 6. <i>must</i> , C. 5. R. 64. | 11. <i>you</i> , C. 3. R. 1. <i>note</i> . |
| 7. <i>for it</i> , <i>it me</i> , C. 3. | 12. <i>rain</i> , C. 1. R. 10. |
| R. 14. pag. 29. | |
| 8. <i>yourself</i> , <i>myself</i> , C. 2. | |
| R. 6. C. 3. R. 1. | |

Bisogna farvi cavar sangue.

M'è stato cavato sangue due volte.

Mene dispiace ; m'ha guata.

S'abbia cura.

Chi può soffrirlo, or patirlo.

Non so perchè il medico non vieta.

Bisogna fare animo, non sarà niente.

Non mi posso muovere.

Tirate le cortine.

V. S. è molto raffreddato.

Sono quindici giorni che sono raffreddato.

Il vento è cangiato.

Averemo della pioggia.

Non pioverà oggi.



COMPOSITION XL

T Here's a beautifull Lady !

She is charming, she's handsome.

¹ Do ² you ³ know her.

⁴ I ² do ³ not know her

She has lovely Eyes.

⁵ I never saw a finer shape.

She has an easy genteel air.

The shape of her face is admirable.

Have you taken notice of [*observed*] her Complexion?

⁶ It is the finest in the World.

A Complexion fair and lovely?

⁷ What white hands she has !

⁸ She has ⁸ teeth as white as snow.

1. *do*, C. 5. R. 51.

2. *know*, C. 4. R. 22.

3. *her*, C. 2. R. 2. C. 3.
R. 4.

4. *not*, C. 3. R. 4.

5. *never*, C. 5. R. 1.

6. *in the*, C. 1. R. 12.

7. *what*, C. 5. R. 60.

8. *teeth*, *snow*, &c. C. 1.
R. 1.

One

COMPOSITION XI.

E *Eco una bella Signóra, or giòvane !*

E vezzósa, è leggiádra.

La conoscéte ?

Non la conósko.

Hà bellí occhi.

Non hò mai visto una più bella statura.

E disinvolta.

Il giro del viso è ben fatto.

Avète osserváto il suo sangue, or la sua carnaggione ?

E'l più bel sangue del mondo.

Una carnaggione bianca e viváce.

O che belle mani hà !

Hà i denti bianchi come la neve.

⁹ One [*they*] may say [*that*] ¹⁰ she is a fair beauty.

She walks agreeably.

She has a sprightly look.

She has surprizing charms.

She is mightily cryed up for a beauty.

I think [*that*] ¹⁰ she has a great ¹¹ deal of wit.
⁸

Beauty may be ⁸ seen but not wit.

⁹ They say [*that*] ¹⁰ she has as much wit as beauty.
⁸

Then she is an epitome of all perfections.

9. *one, they, C. 3. R. 4.* 11. *a great deal of, C. 5.*
10. *that, C. 3. R. 8.* R. 34.



Si può dire ch'ella è una bella biónda.

Cómina con belle maniere, con bel garbo.

Hà una fisonómia spiritósa.

Hà fattézzze vaghe.

E molto commendáta in bellézza.

Credo ch' ábbia molto spírito.

Ben si può vedèr la bellézza, ma lo spírito nò.

Si dice che sia adeguato lo spírito alle sue bellézzze.

E' adunque un compendio di tutte le perfezzióni.



COMPOSITION XII.

¹**T**²He desire of my brother, for the study of
⁴the Italian tongue, is the ⁵cause ⁶that the
⁸passion [that] ⁹he had for hunting ⁹gaming and
⁸the Instruments of musick, are at present much
¹¹abated. If he ⁷had believed the advice [that] you
¹²did give him formerly, he would have then begun
¹³to have ¹⁴studied the principles of it; would have
⁴known a part of the difficulties; and would have
¹⁵made many Voyages with a great Prince who
⁸[that] ¹⁶would have had him.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>The</i> , C. 1. R. 2. Table of articles No. 1. | 9. <i>hunting</i> , &c. C. 1. R. 1. |
| 2. <i>of my</i> , C. 1. R. 18. pag. 31. note 1. | 10. <i>of</i> , C. 1. R. 18. |
| 3. <i>the</i> , C. 1. R. 2. Table of articles No. 2. | 11. <i>if</i> , C. 5. R. 29. |
| 4. <i>of the</i> , C. 1. R. 10. | 12. <i>him</i> , C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1. |
| 5. <i>is cause</i> , C. 1. R. 14. | 13. <i>to</i> , C. 3. R. 16. |
| 6. <i>that</i> , C. 3. R. 8. | 14. <i>of it</i> , C. 3. R. 14. C. 3. R. 2. |
| 7. <i>the</i> , C. 1. R. 2. Table of articles No. 3. | 15. <i>a great</i> , C. 5. R. 11. |
| 8. <i>that</i> , C. 3. R. 8. pag. 10. | 16. <i>him</i> , C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. R. 1. |

COMPOSITION XII.

I *L desiderio di mio fratello per lo studio della lingua Italiana, è cagione che gli ardori c'haveva per la caccia, i giuochi e gli istrumenti di musica, sono adesso molto moderati : s' haveffe creduto gli avoissi che gli davate altre volte, haverebbe all' hora cominciato di studiarne i principii, saperebbe una parte delle difficoltà, et haverebbe fatto molti viaggi col un gran principe che la voleva havere.*



COMPOSITION XIII.

¹ **Y** ²OU had promised me that you would
¹ send us the book that we had asked of
¹ you, and you have not sent it ² to us.

I had promised it ³ to you, it is true, I
⁴ remember it [³ *me of it*]. but you should have
⁵ sent to demand it of ⁶ me, and I would have
³ sent it to you.

⁷ Do not put your self to any more trouble
⁸ about it, I know that my sister has one of them:
¹² Here is my servant, I will bid him go to her
¹⁶ ¹⁷ House to ask it of her: Go with all speed to
²⁰ my sister's, you shall tell her that I pray her to
²⁰ ¹³ lend me her Manuscript, and that I will send
²² ²³ it her back in an hour.

1. *me, us, of you, C.* 2. *it to us, it to you, me of it,*
R. 3. C. 3. R. 1. C. 2 R. 3. C. 3. R. 1.
 2. *that, C. 3. R. 8. and pag. 28. seq.*

COMPOSITION XIII.

M' havevate promesso che ci inviereste il libro
che vi havevamo domandato, e non vel
havete mandato.

Vel' havevo promesso, è vero, mene ricordo, ma
bisognava mandare a domandarmelo, e vel' haverei inviato.

Non vene pigliate più fastidio, so che mia sorella n'
hà uno: Escoli 'l mio servo, gli dirò d' andar da lei per
domandarglielo: Và quanto prima da mia sorella, le dirai
che la prego di prestarmi il suo Manuscritto, e che le
rimanderò frà un hora.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 4. remember, C. 4. R. 1. | 13. my, her, C. 2. R. 1. |
| 5. to, C. 4. R. 17. | 14. will, C. 5. R. 58. |
| 6. it of me, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. | 15. him C. 2. R. 3. |
| R. 2. and pag. 29. | 16. House, C. 5. R. 8. |
| 7. do, C. 5. R. 51. | 17. to, C. 4. R. 18. |
| 8. yourself, about it, C. 2. | 18. it of her, C. 3. R. 2. |
| R. 6. C. 3. R. 1. and | pag. 78. note: |
| page 29. | 19. to, C. 5. R. 8. |
| 9. know, C. 4. R. 22. | 20. her, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3. |
| 10. my, C. 2. R. 1. pag. | R. 1. me, C. 3. R. 2. |
| 31. note 1. | 21. to, C. 4. R. 16. |
| 11. of them, C. 2. R. 8. | 22. it, C. 3. R. 4. |
| C. 3. R. 1. | 23. in, C. 5. R. 28. |
| 12. here C. 5. R. 37. | O 2 C O M |

COMPOSITION XIV.

¹**T**²Here is a man ³who says [⁴*that*] there was
²yesterday a ⁵great ⁶uproar in the street,
¹where there were three men killed; and he
⁴swears [⁴*that*] if he had been ⁸there, ¹there would
⁹have been many more of them, because he has
¹⁰known [⁴*that*] ⁸there were wounded two of his
¹¹friends; that two women and three Children have
¹²been maimed [¹¹*in it*] They talk also ¹³of several
³Merchants, who the passengers report to have been
¹¹cruelly beaten [¹¹*in it*] and that ⁴of ¹³ten soldiers
³that are in prison, ¹there will be four of ⁹them
⁴hanged, and that ⁹six of them are condemned
to the gallies.

1. *there*, C. 5. R. 57.2. *a*, C. 5. R. 11.3. *who*, C. 3. R. 8.4. *that*, *ibid*.5. *great*, C. 5. R. 11.6. *in the*, C. 1. R. 20.7. *if*, C. 1. R. 29.8. *there*, see pag. 110,
note 2.

COMPOSITION XIV.

V' è ora è un huomo che dice che vi fù ieri un gran rumore nella strada, ove furono uccist tre buonini, e giura che se vi fosse stato, vene sarebbero stati molto più, perche hà saputo che v' erano stati feriti duoi amici suoi; che due donne, e tre fanciulli vi sono stati strappati: Si parla anche di molti mercanti che i viandanti dicono esservi stati atrocemente battuti, e che di dieci soldati che sono in prigione, vene saranno quattro impiccati, e che vene sono sei condannati in galera.

9. *of them*, C. 3. R. 14.
and see pag. 48.

10. *known*, C. 3. R. 22.

11. *in it*, C. 3. R. 14.

12. *they*, C. 3. R. 13.

13. *of*, C. 1. R. 18.

COMPOSITION XV.

¹**O** ²U ³R father who art in heaven, hallowed
⁴be thy name, ⁴thy kingdom come, ⁴thy
⁵will be done ⁵in earth as it is ⁵in heaven: Give
⁶us ⁷this day ⁷our daily bread, and forgive
⁶us ⁷our trespasses as we forgive ⁸them ⁸that trespass
⁷against us [⁷to ⁷our debtors] ⁶and lead ⁹us ⁹not into
⁶temptation, but deliver us from evil, for thine is
the kingdom, the power and the glory for ever and
ever. Amen.

1. *Our*, C. 2. R. 1.
 pag. 31. note
2. *who*, C. 3. R. 8.
3. *in the*, C. 1. R. 7.
4. *thy*, C. 2. R. 1.
5. *in*, C. 5. R. 28.

6. *us*, C. 2. R. 3. C. 3.
 R. 2.
7. *our*, C. 2. R. 1.
8. *them*, Table of Articles,
 Pl.
9. *into*, C. 5. R. 28.

COM-

COMPOSITION XV.

Padre nostro che sei ne' cieli, sia santificato il tuo nome, venga il tuo regno, sia fatta la tua volontà in terra come l'è in-cielo: dacci hoggi il nostro pane cotidiano, e rimittisi i nostri debiti, sì come ancora noi gli rimettiamo ai nostri debitori, e non indurci in tentatione, ma liberaci dal male, perciocche tuo è il regno, la potenza, e la gloria in sempiterno, Amen.



COM-

COMPOSITION. XVI.

I believe in God, the Father almighty, maker
 of Heaven and Earth, and in Jesus Christ
 his only Son our Lord, who was conceived by
 [of] the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary, suf-
 fered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and
 buried, he descended into Hell, he rose the third
 day from the dead, he ascended into heaven, sit-
 teth at the right hand of God the Father Al-
 mighty, from thence he shall come to judge the
 quick and the dead.

I believe in the Holy Ghost, the holy Catho-
 lick Church, the Communion of saints, the for-
 giveness of sins, the resurrection of the body, and
 the life everlasting. Amen

1. of, C. 1. R. 10.

2. his, our, C. 2. R. 1.
 pag. 31. note.

3. of, C. 1. R. 18.

4. into, C. 1. R. 20.

5. from the, C. 1. R. 18.

6. into, C. 5. R. 28.

7. at the, C. 1. R. 19.

COMPOSITION XVI.

I O credo in Dio, il Padre Onnipotente, Creatore del cielo e della terra, e in Gesù Christo unico suo Figliuolo nostro Signore, il qual fù concepto di Spirito Santo, nacque di Maria Vergine, patì sotto Pontio Pilato, fù crocifisso, morto e sepolto, discese agli inferi, risuscitò il terzo giorno da' morti, è salito in cielo, siede alla destra di Dio Padre Onnipotente, di là verrà a giudicar' i vivi e i morti.

Io credo nello Spirito Santo, la santa chiesa Cattolica, la communion de' Santi, la rimission de' peccati, la risurrezion del corpo, e la vita eterna. Amen.

8. from, C. 1. R. 18.

9. to, G. 4. R. 17.

10. in the, C. 1. R. 20.

COM-

COMPOSITION. XVII.

I Have said, I will take heed to my ways, that I offend not with my tongue.

I will keep my mouth with a bridle whilst the wicked shall be before me.

I was dumb, and silent, I kept myself from godd, but my pain was increased.

My heart was hot within me, and a fire was kindled within me [in my mind,] wherefore I spoke with my tongue, saying,

Lord, let me know my end, and what is the number of my days, that I may know how long I have yet to live in this world.

Behold, thou hast made my days a span long, and the time of my life is as nothing before thee; verily every man living is altogether vanity.

IO havea detto, io prenderò guardia alle mie vie, ch'io non peochi con la mia lingua.

Io guarderò la mia bocca con un frenello, mentre l'empio sarà davanti a me.

Io sono stato muto, e cheto: hò etiandio taciuto il bene: ma la mia doglia s'è innaspita.

Il mio cuore s'è riscaldato dentro di me: un fuoco s'è acceso, mentre io ardebbova questo nell'animo mio: onde io hò parlato con la mia lingua: dicendo.

O Signore, fammi conoscere il mio fine, e quale è il termine de' miei dì: finchè io sappia quanto io hò da vivere anchora in questo mondo.

Ecco, tu hai ridotti i miei dì alla misura d'un palmo, e'l tempo della mia vita è come niente appo te: certo, ogni huomo, quantunque sia in pie, è tutta vanità.

Assuredly,

Affuredly, man walketh in a vain shadow, and certainly in vain disquieteth himself, he heapeth up riches, without knowing to whom they shall be gathered.

And now, Lord, what do I regard? my hope is in thee.

Deliver me from all my offences, and make me not to be the rebuke of the foolish.

I became dumb, and opened not my mouth, for it was thy doing, or thou has done this.

When thou dost chasten one for sin, thou makest to consume away whatever there is comely and excellent in him, like as a moth; verily, every man is vanity.

O lord, hear my prayer, and give ear to my calling, and be not deaf to my tears.

For I am a stranger with thee, and a sojourner as all my fathers were.

O spare me a little that I may recover my strength before I go hence, and be no more seen.

Certo huomo v'è e viene in figura: certo in vano si travagliava tutti, ed adunano de beni, senza sapere chi gl'li raccherà.

Mà hora, Signore, che aspettavo è la mia speranza e in te.

Liberami da tutti i miei misfatti: non farmi esser il vituperio dello stolto.

Io ammutolisca, io non apriro la bocca: perciocchè tu ai fatto questo.

Se tu castighi alcuno con castigamenti d'iniquità, tu fai struggere tutto ciò che v'è di bello e d'eccellente in lui, come una tignuola: certo, ogni huomo è vanità.

Signore, ascolta la mia oratione, e porgi l'orecchio al mio grido, e non esser sordo alle mie lagrime.

Perciocchè io son forestiere appa te, ed auventiccio, come tutti i miei padri.

Cessati da me, acciocchè io mi rinforzi, innanzi ch'io me ne vada, e non sia più.

C O M-

COMPOSITION XVIII.

O Come, let us sing joyfully unto the Lord: let us rejoyce in the strength of our salvation.

Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving: and shew our selves glad in him with psalms.

For the Lord is a great God: and a great king above all gods.

In his hand are all the corners of the earth: and the heighth of the hills are his also.

The sea is his, and he made it: and his hands prepared the dry land.

O come, let us worship, and fall down: and kneel before the Lord our maker.

For he is the Lord our God and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand.

To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts: as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness;

V Enite, cantiamo lietamente al Signore, giubiliamo alla rocca della nostra salute.

Andiamgli incontro con lodi, giubiliamogli con salmi

Perciocche il Signore è Dio grande, e Re grande sopra tutti gl' Iddii.

Perciocche egli tiene in mano le profondità della terra, e l'altezze de' monti sono sue.

Ed a lui appartiene il mare, perche egli l'hà fatto: e l'asciutto, perche le sue mani l'han formato.

Venite adoriamo, ed inchiniamci, inginocchiamci davanti al Signore, che ci hà fatti.

Perciocche egli è il nostro Dio, e noi siamo il popolo del suo pasco, e la greggia della sua condotta.

Hoggi se udite la sua voce, non indurate il vostro cuore, come nella provocatione, e come nel giorno della tentatione nel deserto.

When your fathers
tempted me; proved me,
and saw my works.

Forty years long was I
grieved with this genera-
tion, and said, it is a
people that do err in
their hearts, for they
have not known my
ways.

Unto whom I swear in
my wrath, that they
should not enter into my
rest.

*Ove i padri vostri mi
tentarono, mi pruovarono;
E anche videro le mie opere.*

*Lo spatio di quarant'
anni quella generatione mi
fù di noia, onde Io dissi,
Costoro sono un popolo sviato
di cuore, e non conoscono
le mie vie.*

*Perciò giurai nell' ira
mia, se entrano giammia
mio riposo.*

COMPOSITION XIX.

LET every soul be
subject to the higher
powers; for there is no
power but of God: the
powers that be, are or-
dained of God. Who-
soever therefore resisteth
the power, resisteth the
ordinance of God: and
they that resist, shall re-
ceive to themselves dam-
nation. For rulers are
not a terror to good
works, but to the evil.
Wilt thou then not be

OGNI persona sia
sottoposta alle podestà
superiori: Perchioche non
v'è podestà senon da Dio:
E le podestà che sono, son
da Dio ordinate. Tal che
chi resiste alla podestà re-
siste all'ordinanza di Dio;
e quelli che vi resistono, ne
riceveranno giudicio sopra
loro. Concio sia cosa che i
Magistrati non sieno di spa-
vento alle buone opere, ma
alle malvagie: Hor, vuoi
tu non temer della podestà?
P afraid

afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: for he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doth evil. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

facia ch' è bene, e tu haverai lode da essa. Percioche il Magistrato è ministro di Dio per te el bene: Ma se tu fai male, teme; percioche egli non porta indarno la spada; conciosia cosa ch' egli sia ministro di Dio, vendicator in ira contr' a colui che fa ciò ch' è male. Perciò conviene di necessità essergli soggetto, non sol per l' ira ma anchora per la coscienza.

COMPOSITION XX.

BE ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass. For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he

SIATE *facitori della parola, e non solo uditori, ingannando voi stessi: percioche se alcuno è uditor della parola, e non facitore, egli è simile ad un huomo che considera la sua natia faccia in uno specchio. Imperoche dopo ch' egli s' è mirato, egli sene va, e subito ha dimenticato quale egli fosse. Ma chi avrà*
Where-

was. But whoſo looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man ſhall be bleſſed in his deed. If any man among you ſeem to be religious, and bridle not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this; to viſit the fatherleſs and widows in their affliction, and to keep himſelf unſpotted from the world.

riguardato bene adentro nella legge perfetta. ch' è la legge della libertà, e farà perſeuerato; eſſo non eſſendo uditor dimentichevol, ma facitor dell'opera, farà beato nel ſuo operare. Se alcuno pare eſſer religioſo fra voi, e non tiene a freno la ſua lingua, anzi ſodduca il cuor ſuo, la religion del tale è vana: la religion pura ed immacolata appo Iddio il Padre è queſta, Viſitar gli orſani, e le vedove nelle loro afflizioni, e conſervarſi puro dal mondo.

COMPOSITION XXI.

Bleſſed is the man that hath not walked in the counſel of the ungodly, nor ſtood in the way of ſinners: and hath not ſat in the ſeat of the ſcornfull.

But his delight is in the law of the Lord: and in his law will he exerciſe himſelf day and night.

BEATO l'uomo, che non è cominàto nel conſiglio degli anpi, e non s'è fermato nella via de peccatori, e non è ſaluto nella ſedia degli ſchernitori.

Anzi il cui diletto è nella legge del Signore, e medita in eſſa giorno e notte.

P 2

And

He shall be like a tree planted by the water-side : that will bring forth his fruit in due season.

His leaf also shall not wither : and look whatsoever he doth, it shall prosper.

As for the ungodly it is not so with them : but they are like the chaff which the wind scattereth away.

Therefore the ungodly shall not be able to stand in the judgment : neither the sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

But the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous : and the way of the ungodly shall perish.

Egli sarà come un albero piantato presso à ruscelli d'acque, il qual rende il suo frutto nella sua stagione.

E le cui frondi non appassano : e tutto quello ch'egli sarà prospererà.

Così non saranno già gli empi : anzi saranno come pula sospinta dal vento.

Per ciò gli empi non staranno ritti nel giudicio, ne i peccatori nella raunanza de' giusti.

Perciocchè il Signore conosce la via de' giusti : ma la via degli empi perirà.

Note, The Learner may furnish himself with more English Lessons from the Psalms, or other Part of the Book of Common-Prayer, Testament, or other good Author, and correct them by the same in Italian.



Te

To the LEARNER.

* * * In making the foregoing *Compositions*, or other *Lessons* that may be given, it will frequently occur that some Words in the *Italian*, by an allegorical or different Expression or Turn, give more Elegance and Grace to the Language, I shall therefore here set down for the Learner's Improvement, certain *Verbs* and *Prepositions* that have various Significations and require his attention.

ANDARE, to go; &c.

A *Andare dietro*, to follow, to press, to solicit a Person.

Andar' in amore, to be in love.

Andare via, to go away.

Andar' in estasi, to be raised, or in extasy.

Andar male, to perish.

Andar' in collera, to be angry, to put oneself in a passion.

Andar' a donne, to visit the Ladies.

Andar' in cerca, to search up and down.

Andar' a cercar roga, to seek trouble.

Andar' a gala, to float, or swim on the Water.

Andar' in buon ora, to go in peace,

Andar' in mal' ora, to be ruined.

Andar per le peste, to be beaten.

Andar' alla longa, to be tedious.

- Andar' alle corte*, to make haste.
Andar di corpo, to go slow.
Andar' attornò, to run up and down.
Andar' altero, to be proud.
Andar dietro ad una cosa, to stand trifling with any thing.
Andar per la mente, to come into one's mind.
Andar di mal in peggio, out of the Fryng pan into the fire.
Andar mal in arnese, to be ill dressed.
Andar' a gambe levate, to lose, or squander away his estate.
Andar' a cavallo, to ride a Horseback.
Andar per viole, to speak impertinently.
Andare in bestia, to be in a passion.
Andare grosso, to look big.
Andar' ad hoste, to be a Soldier.
Andar' alla busca, to go a plundering.
Andar in cimbalis, to be transported with joy.
Andar in succhio, to have one's Mouth water.
Andar vuota, to miss one's aim.
Andar per filo, to be forced to do a thing.
Andar in sincopi, to fall in a swoon.
Andar in piccardia, to go and be hanged.
Andar sopra le parole, to trust to fair words.
Andar per il mondo, to travel.
Andar spanto, to be dressed extravagantly.
Andarsene preso alle grida, to believe every idle Report
A longo andare, at long run.

D A R E, to give, &c.

- Dar d' occhio*, to cast one's Eyes on.
Dare addosso ad uno, to throw one's self upon a Person.
Darsi a gambe, to run away.

Dar

- Dar nella rete*, to fall into a Snare.
Dar le carte, to deal, or give the Cards.
Dar' animo, to give courage, or to encourage.
Darfi l' animo, to have Courage.
Dar fede, to believe.
Dar' ad intendere, to make one believe.
Dar' in nulla, not to succeed.
Darfi l' insensò, to praise one's self.
Dar' in luce, to publish.
Darfi a fare, to set one self about a Thing.
Dar nel rosso, to be a little on the Red.
Darfi pensiero, to care for.
Dar del signore, to call one a Gentleman.
Dar del furfante, to call one a Rogue.
Dar parola, to promise.
Dar ne' ladri, to fall into the Hands of Thieves.
Dar la burla, to laugh at a Person.
Dar leva, to provoke.
Dar' in prestito, to lend.
Dar fuoco, to burn, or set on fire.
Dar sicurtà, to Bail.
Dar nel matta, to play the fool.
Dar la caccia, to put to flight.
Dar principio, or *fine*, to begin, or end.
Dar conto, to give an account.
Darfi allo studio, to apply one's self to Study.
Dar calci al vento, e pugni all' aria, to fight with
 one's Shadow.
Dar di bocca d'ap pertutta, to concern one's self with
 every Man's Business.
Dar da ridere, da parlare, to make one Laugh, to
 make one Speak.
Darfi bel tempo, to divert one's self.
Dar addietro, to give back.

Dar adito, to give access to.
Dar alla mano, to Bribe.
Dar a' uedere, to give one to understand.
Dar campo, to give Liberty.
Dar capo, to come to the end of a Matter.
Dar copimento, to finish.
Dar da bere, to give one Drink.
Dar da dormire, to give one a Night's Lodging.
Dar de' gl' ingoffi, to give a good box o'th' Ear.
Dar il batesimo, to baptize.
Dar il buon anno, to wish a merry New-year.
Dar un buon giorno, to bid one Good Morrow.
Dar il buon viaggio, to wish one a good Journey.
Dar il buon arriva, to bid one Welcome.
Dar il grande Addio, to bid the World Adieu.
Dar il viso, to turn one's Eyes on any Thing.
Dar in Terra, to run aground.
Dar la ben-venuta, to bid one friendly welcome.
Dar la buona mano, to wish one good Luck.
Dar l' anello, to marry.
Dar la voce, to raise a Report.
Dar l' ultimo crollo, to fall down stark dead.
Dar la vinta, to yield the Victory.
Darsi to apply one's self to.
Darsi pace, to live quietly.

F A R E, to do, &c.

Far animo, to give Courage.
Farfi animo, to take Courage.
Fare a proposito, to be proper, or fit.
Far motto, to make a Sign.
Far il bravo, to set up for a Bully.
Fare scelta, to chuse.
Far pompa, to boast.

Dar

- Far' il grugno*, to pout at one.
Far danari, to heap up Money.
Far gente, or *soldati*, to raise Soldiers.
Far di mestieri, to be necessary.
Farfi innanzi, to come forward.
Farfi in quà, to approach, or advance.
Farfi in là, to go at a distance.
Farfi in dietro, to retire.
Far a sepere, to let one know.
Far a tacei, to throw or fight with Stones.
Far avanzo, to thrive.
Far baco baco, to play Bo-peep.
Far broglio, to make a hurley-burley.
Far buona vicinanza, to keep fair with one's Neighbours.
Far com lo speraviere, to live from Hand to Mouth.
Far cose di fuoio, to do wonderful Things.
Far del grande, to take State upon one.
Far del vezziato, to play the wanton.
Far di capello, to pull of one's Hat.
Far d' una lancia un fuso, to bring a Noble to ninepence.
Far faccia, to set a good Face on Things.
Far sagotto, to pack up one's Awls and be gone.
Far Figliuoli, to begat and bear Children.
Far gala, to be gay and Merry.
Far gofveglià, to throw the House out at the Window.
Far greppo, to make up a Mouth.
Fare i fatti suoi, to follow his own Affairs.
Fare el balordo, to play the Ninny.
Far il diavolo, to play the Devil.
Far il gattone, to make as if one saw or knew not.
Far le spese, to bear one's Charges.

STARE, to stand, &c.

- Stare in piedi*, to stand upright.
Star sù to rise ;
Star giù to sit down.
Star per uscire, to be just going out.
Star ben a cavallo, to sit well on Horseback.
Star' in casa, to stay at home.
Star lesto, to be upon one's Guard.
Star sù le burle, to jest, to banter.
Star saldo, to hold out stoutly, or fast.
Star per cadere, to be ready to fall.
Star per morire, to be like to die.
Star' in dubbio, to be in doubt.
Star' a vedere, to expect the Issue.
Star colle mani a cintola, or *a cintura*, to stand idle,
 or with one's hands in one's Pocket.
questo vi stà bene, that becomes you well.
questo non mi stà bene, that does not become me well.
Star' a bacco, to out-face.
Star' a bottega, to mind one's Shop.
Star' a crepare cuore, to live at Heart's Ease.
Star' in disagio, to live in Sorrow.
Star' a dormire, to lye Sleeping.
Star' a fronte, to out-face.
Star' a gala, to float.
Star' al detto, to rely on a Man's Word.
Star' allegro, to live, or be merry.
Star' al mondo, to live in the World.
Star' a pollo pesto, to be at the Point of Death.
Star' a segno to stand near the Mark.
Star' in speranza, to live in Hopes,
Star' a stento, to live in sorrow.

Star' à persi, to be Half Fellow well met;
Star' a uno, to depend upon one.
Star' innamorato, to be in Love.
Star' in letto, to be abed.
Star in molle, to lye asleep.
Star' in orecchio, to hearken.
Star' in rischio, to be in Danger.
Star' in se, to be positive.
Star' in zurlò, to stand in Amaze.
Star' maggiese, to live Idle.
Star sopra di se, to presume too much on one's self.
Star punta per punta, to be always at Variance.
Star sano, to be in Health.
Star su'l avviso, to be prepar'd.
Star trà'l sì 'el nò, to be between yes and no.

AVERE, to have.

Aver dell' huomo da bene, to look like an honest Man.
Aver del miracolo, to look on't as a Miracle.
Aver caro, aver da caro, to be well pleas'd.
Aver a bene, to approve of.
Aver per bene, to like or consent to.
Aver per male, to disapprove of.
Aver a male, to dislike.
Aver a cuore, to have at Heart.
Aver-ùl capo altrove, to think of other Things.
Aver de fare, to be busie.
Aver in pregio, in istima, to esteem.
Aver a capitale, to esteem much.
Aver a dispetto, to have in despite.
Aver-agio, to be at ease.
Aver bel Tempo, to live a merry Life.
Aver buona voce, to be well spoken of.

Aver

Aver che zbe si fia per un pezzo di pane, to have a Thing Dog cheap.

Aver del tondo, have little Wit.

Aver destro, to have fit Occasion.

Aver di che, to have wherewith.

Aver dietro, to contemn.

Aver di gratia, to take it as a Favour.

Aver fretta, to be in haste.

Aver fumo, to be Proud.

Aver il cervello che voli, to have a roving Head.

Aver in su le dita, to have at ones Fingers end.

Aver le gambata, to were the Willow-green

Aver l'occhio al pennello to mind one's Business.

Aver le mani ad uno, to hold one fast at his Pleasure.

Aver mezzo, or modo, to be able, or have Means.

Aver nell'idea, to bear in Mind.

Aver occhio, to have a fair Outside.

Aver odore, to have an inkling of a Thing.

Aver ombra, to be fearful of.

Aver pensiero, to be full of Care, or Thoughtful.

Aver piede, to get footing.

Aver poco sale in zucca, to have but little Wit.

E S S E R E, to be, &c.

Esser per fare, to be just going to do.

Esser da qualche cosa, to be good for something.

Esser da poco, to have but little Wit.

Esser da niente, to be good for nothing.

Esser di giovamento, to help, to assist.

Esser di buona nascita, to come of a good Family.

Esser per la mala via; to be ruin'd, to be in a bad condition.

Esser per le fratte, to be undone or ruin'd.

Esser fuor di bologna, to be ignorant.

Esser

Èsser a grado, to be acceptable.
Èsser a mal partito, to be in a bad taking.
Èsser in questione, to squabble.
Èsser ben veduto, to be kindly entertain'd.
Èsser di poco levata, to be of small worth.
Èsser di testa, to be hare-brain'd.
Èsser in Èssere, to be in State, Quality, and Condition.
Èsser in fiori, to be in one's Prime.
Èsser in fortuna, to be lucky.
Èsser in pagliuola, to be in Child-bed.
Èsser in predicamento, to be in Consideration.
Èsser in procinto, to be always ready.
Èsser in fucchio, to have one's Mouth water.
Èsser in uggia, to be troublesome to others.
Èsser pace, Quits at play.
Èsser una coppa d'oro, to be one of a Thousand.

S A P E R E, to know, &c.

Sapere a mente, to know by heart.
Saper' a mena dita, to have at one's Finger's ends.
Saper male, to be sorry.
Saper di buono, saper buono, to smell well.
Saper di cattivo, to smell ill.
Saper di niente, to have no Smell, to smell of nothing.
Saper' trovar il pelo nelle uova, to be cunning, to be sharp.
Ti sò dire, I can tell thee.
Sapere per lo senno, to know by Rote,

T E N R E E, to hold, &c.

Tenere da uno, to be of one's Side.
Tenere per galant' huomo, to believe one an honest Man.
Tener le lagrime, to forbear Weeping.

Tener le risa, to hold Laughing.
Tener conto d'uno, to make account of, to esteem a
 Person.
Tenerla per se, to keep a Thing to one's self.
Tener a mente, call to mind.
Tenere a battesimo, to stand Godfather.
Tener mano a' ladri, to be accessory to a Theft.
Tener carrozza, servitori, to keep a Coach, Servants.
Tener l' invito, to accept of what is propos'd.
Tener a pivolo, to live at Rack and Manger.
Tener a sua posta, to keep one at his Beck,
Tener corte bandita, to keep open-house.
Tener a bada, to hold in suspense.
Tener fermo, to keep one's Word.
Tener in bocca, to keep a Secret.
Tener la bestia in cavazza, to bridle one's Appetites.
Tener le poste, to hold Stakes.
Tener mano, to lend a Hand to.
Tener mente, to heed.
Tener mercato, to bargain.
Tener ragione, to judge according to Law.

VOLERE, to be willing &c.

Vogliono alcuni, some believe.
Volerla con una, to set upon one.
Voler bene, to love.
Voler male, to hate.
Voler più tosto, to have rather.
Volere la gatta, to pick a Quarrel with one.
Volebbe pur Dio, Oh would to God.

VENIRE, to come, &c.

Venir meno, to fall into a Weakness, or to faint.
Vener

Vener in fucchio, to have one's Mouth water.

Venir in forte, to fall to one's Lot.

Venir sotto nome, to go by the name of. *

Venir stimato, to be esteem'd.

Venire alle strette, to come to Blows.

Non mi viene bene, it does not please me.

questo vi viene bene, that becomes you well.

Venir voglia, to have a Mind, or Desire.

Venir adosso, to fall upon.

Venir alle prese, to come to close Fight.

Venir a dire, to import, or mean.

Venir alle mani, to come to Handy-blows.

Venir fallito, to miss of one's Aim, or Purpose.

Phrases in Dialogues.

HOW do you do
Sir ; Madam ?

Very well at your service.

Where do you go, or
will you go ?

I cannot,

Do me the favour.

I would if I was able.

I wish to God that I was
able.

I would do it with all my
heart.

It pleases me ; it does
not please me.

Fraſi in Dialogo.

COME ſtā mio Signo-
re ; mia Signora ;
come ſtā V. S. ?

*Beniſſimo per ſervirla, al
ſuo ſervizio, a' ſuoi cenni.*

*Dove vā, o vuol' andar
V. S. ?*

Non poſſo.

*La priego mi faccia il favo-
re ; mi favorisca di dic.*

Porrei ſe poteſſi.

Voleſſe laddio ch' io poteſſi.

Lo farei di tutto cuore.

Mi piace ; non mi piace.

Q

Is

It seems so to me ; it is my opinion.	<i>Mi pare così ; sono di questo parere.</i>
I know not what to do ;	<i>Non so che farci.</i>
I cannot help it.	<i>Non potevo fare a meno di.</i>
I wonder at it.	<i>Mene meraviglio.</i>
I must do it.	<i>Hò bisogno di farlo.</i>
I have a great mind for it.	<i>N' hò grandissima voglia, ne moro di voglia.</i>
I am very glad of it.	<i>No godo ; mene rallegro.</i>
I am sorry for it.	<i>Mene dispiace, mene duole</i>
I wish you joy.	<i>La felicito ; mene congratulo.</i>
I am impatient for it.	<i>Ne sono impaziente.</i>
I shall esteem it a favour.	<i>L'avrò per favore ; mi crederò favorito.</i>
Sir, I know not what you say.	<i>Non so quel che dica V. S.</i>
I am glad to see you in good health.	<i>Godo, hò caro vederla in buone salute.</i>
I will go to your House ; I will not fail.	<i>Verrò da lei ; non mancherò, senza fallo.</i>
I am much obliged to you.	<i>Le sono molto obligato</i>
I ask your pardon.	<i>Mi scusi V. S. mi perdoni.</i>
They tell me.	<i>Mi vien detto.</i>
Believe me ; answer me ; hear me,	<i>Mi creda ; mi risponde ; mi senta ; m'ascolti.</i>
Write to me ; speak to me ; excuse me ; tell me, give me.	<i>Mi scriva, mi parli, mi scusi, mi dica, mi dia.</i>
What do you think of it ?	<i>Che ne pensa ?</i>
What o'Clock is it ?	<i>Che ora è ? Che nuova ? che si dice di nuovo ?</i>
What news is there ?	
What do they say of it ?	<i>Che sene dice ?</i>

What

What weather is it?	<i>Che tempo fa?</i>
Upon my honour ; upon my word.	<i>Sul' onor mio ; sulla mia parola.</i>
How can he do it,	<i>Come può farlo.</i>
How long is it since you are come ?	<i>Quanto è ch' è venuta ?</i>
How long have you stayed ?	<i>Quanto è stata V. & ?</i>
How old are you.	<i>Quanti anni hà ?</i>
When will you do me the favour to come to my house ?	<i>Quando mi vuol onorare della sua presenza ?</i>
When you please.	<i>Quando le piacerà ; quando vorrà ; quando le sarà commodo.</i>
Make no noise ; be not afraid.	<i>Non faccia romore ; non tema.</i>
Stay a little.	<i>Stia un poco più.</i>
It is early, it is not late.	<i>E troppo di buon'ora, non è tardi.</i>
There is time enough.	<i>È tempo abbastanza.</i>
You are welcome.	<i>Ben venuto.</i>
I had forget it.	<i>M'era ussito di mente.</i>
God blefs you.	<i>Iddio la benedica.</i>
Will you change place ?	<i>Vuol cangiar loco.</i>
If you please.	<i>Se le piace.</i>
Turn to the right hand, to the left.	<i>Volti alla dritta, alla man- ca.</i>
At what o'Clock do you dine ?	<i>A che ora vuol pranzare ?</i>
At three o'clock.	<i>Alle tre.</i>
It is dinner time.	<i>E ora di pranzo.</i>
See what a clock it is by your watch.	<i>Veda che ora è al suo orolo.</i>
It is going to rain.	<i>Vuol piovver molto.</i>

It is fine weather, bad weather.	<i>Fà bel tempo, cattivo tempo.</i>
It snows, it freezes.	<i>Nevica, fiocca ; grandina.</i>
The sun shines ; it is moon-light.	<i>E sole, fà sole ; fà lume di luna, è lume di luna.</i>
It is done for us, we are ruined.	<i>Siamo perduti, perfi.</i>
Do not trouble yourself about it.	<i>Non sene impicci voſſignoria.</i>
I will not concern myself about it.	<i>Non mi ci voglio impicciare.</i>
From whence came you?	<i>D' onde viene ?</i>
Which way do they go?	<i>Per dove ſi paſſa ?</i>
Sir, take care.	<i>Stia V. S. ſull' avviſo.</i>
I have nothing to give him.	<i>Non hò che dargli.</i>
He is in great want.	<i>E in grandiffima miſeria, calamità.</i>
Make my compliments to.	<i>Faccia i miei complimenti, porti i miei ſaluti.</i>
I will make your compliments.	<i>Porterò le ſue grazie.</i>
You will repent of it afterwards.	<i>Potrà pentirſene poi.</i>
There are many of a different opinion.	<i>Vene ſon molti di diverſo parere, di varia opinione.</i>



I Mesi dell' Anno.

The Months of the Year.

January	<i>Gennaro</i>
February	<i>Febbraio</i>
March	<i>Marzo</i>
April	<i>Aprile</i>
May	<i>Maggio</i>
June	<i>Giugno</i>
July	<i>Luglio</i>
August	<i>Agosto</i>
September	<i>Settembre</i>
October	<i>Ottobre</i>
November	<i>Novembre</i>
December	<i>Dicembre</i>

I Di della Settimana.

The Days of the Week.

Monday	<i>Lunedì</i>
Tuesday	<i>Martedì</i>
Wednesday	<i>Mércordì</i>
Thursday	<i>Giòvedì</i>
Friday	<i>Venerdì</i>
Saturday	<i>Sábato</i>
Sunday	<i>Doménico</i>

Le Feste dell'Anno.

The Holy-Days of the Year.

New-year's Day	<i>Il capo d' anno</i>
Twelfth Day, or the } Epiphany	<i>Il giorno de' Re, i Epifania</i>
The Purification, or } Candlemas Day	<i>La Ceraimola, la Purificazione</i>
Shrove Tuesday	<i>Il Carnavale</i>
Lent	<i>La Quarésima</i>
The Ember Weeks	<i>Le quattro tempora</i>
The Passion, or Holy } Week.	<i>La settimana santa</i>
Palm Sunday	<i>La domenica delle Palme</i>
Good Friday	<i>Il Venerdì santo</i>
Easter Day	<i>Il giorno di Pasqua</i>
Low Sunday	<i>La domenica in albis</i>
Rogation Week	<i>Le Rogazioni</i>
Ascension	<i>L' Ascensione</i>
Whit Sunday, or Pen- } tecost	<i>La Pentecoste</i>
Midsummer Day	<i>San Giovanni</i>
All Saints	<i>La festa di tutt' i santi</i>
All Souls	<i>Il giorno de' morti</i>
Christmas Day	<i>Natàle, le feste di Natàle</i>
The Eve, or Vigil	<i>La Vigilia</i>
Harvest-time	<i>La Messè</i>
The Vintage	<i>Le Vendémie</i>
A Holy Day	<i>Giorno di festa</i>

PROPER

PROPER NAMES.

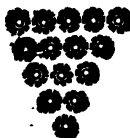
OF

MEN, WOMEN, KINGDOMS, CITIES,
RIVERS, &c.

A D A M, <i>Adamo</i>	Elizabeth, <i>Elisabeta</i>
Abraham, <i>Abramo</i>	Eve, <i>Eva</i>
Anthony, <i>Antonio</i>	Helene, <i>Elena</i>
Benjamin, <i>Beniamino</i>	Joan, <i>Giovanna</i>
Charles, <i>Carlo</i>	Eleanor <i>Eleonora</i>
Edward, <i>Eduardo</i>	Mary, <i>Maria</i>
Francis, <i>Francesco</i>	Margaret, <i>Margherita</i>
George, <i>Giorgio</i>	Rachel, <i>Raïbel</i>
Henry, <i>Enrico</i>	Rebecca, <i>Rebecca</i>
James, <i>Giàcomo</i>	Sarah, <i>Sara</i>
John, <i>Giovanni, Giò</i>	Susan, <i>Sufanna.</i>
Lewis, <i>Lodovico</i>	
Mark, <i>Marco</i>	Europe, <i>Europa</i>
Paul, <i>Páolo</i>	Asia, <i>Asia</i>
Peter, <i>Pietro</i>	Africa, <i>Africa</i>
Philip, <i>Filippo</i>	America, <i>America</i>
Richard, <i>Riccardo</i>	The East Indies, <i>Le In-</i> <i>die orientale</i>
Robert, <i>Roberto</i>	The West Indies, <i>Le In-</i> <i>die occidentale</i>
Thomas, <i>Tomasso</i>	Great Britain, <i>Gran Bri-</i> <i>tagna</i>
William, <i>Guglielmo</i>	England, <i>Inghilterra</i>
Ann, <i>Anna</i>	London,
Catherine, <i>Caterina</i>	
Diana, <i>Diana</i>	

London, *Londra*
 Scotland, *Scotzia*
 Edenburg, *Edimburgo*
 Ireland, *Irlanda*.
 Dublin, *Dublino*
 Denmark, *Danemarca*
 Copenhagen, *Coppenha-*
gue.
 Norway, *Norvegia*
 Sweden, or Sweedland,
Suezia
 Stockholm, *Stocalme*
 Moscovy, or Russia,
Moscovia, Russia
 Moscow, *Mosca*
 France, *Francia*
 Paris, *Pariggi*
 Germany, *Germania*
 Vienna, *Vienna*
 Holland, the seven U-
 nited Provinces, *Olandi,*
Provincie Unite

Amsterdam, *Amsterdam*
 The Netherlands, or
 Flanders, *Flandra, Pa-*
esi Bassi
 Brussels, *Brusselles*
 Switzerland, *Suissa*
 Basil, or Basle, *Basilea*
 The Grisons, *I Grigioni*
 Poland, *Pologna*
 Cracow, *Cracovia*
 Spain, *Spagna*,
 Madrid, *Madrid*
 Portugal, *Portugallia*
 Lisbon, *Lisbona*
 Italy, *Italia*
 Rome, *Roma*
 Venice, *Venezia*
 Turkey in Europe, *Tur-*
chia in Europa
 Constantinople, *Constan-*
tinopoli.



A SMALL VOCABULARY

OF

Words in frequent Use.

GOD, *Iddio, Dio*
Jesus Christ, *Gi-
sù Christo*

The Holy Ghost, *La
Spirito santo*

The Trinity, *La Trinità*

The Virgin Mary, *La
Vergine.*

The Angels, *Gli Angeli*

The Saints, *I Santi*

Heaven, *Il Cielo*

Paradise, *Il Paradiso*

Hell, *L' Inferno*

The Devils, *I Diavoli,*

The Fire, *Il Fuoco*

The Air, *L' Aria*

The Earth, *La Terra*

The Water, *L' Acqua*

The Sea, *Il Mare*

The Sun, *Il Sole*

The Moon, *La Luna*

The Stars, *Le Stelle*

The Wind, *Il Vento*

The Rain, *La Pioggia*

The Clouds, *Le Nuvole*

The Hail, *La Grândine*

The Lightening, *Il Balé-
no, il lampo*

The Thunderbolt, *Il
Fulmine*

The Snow, *La Neve,*

The Frost, *Il Gelo*

The Ice, *Il Ghiaccio*

The Dew, *La Rugiada*

A Fog, or Mist, *La
Nébbia*

The Spring, *La Primavera*

The Summer, *La State*

The Autumn, *L' Au-
tunno*

The

The Winter, <i>L' Inverno,</i> <i>il verno</i>	A Brother, <i>Fratello</i>
The Rainbow, <i>Arco celeste, Iride</i>	A Sister, <i>Sorella</i>
A Shower, <i>Scossa d' acqua</i>	An Uncle, <i>Zio</i>
The New Moon, <i>No-vilunio, Luna nuova</i>	A Grand Father, <i>Avolo, Nonno</i>
The full Moon, <i>Luna piena</i>	A Grand Mother, <i>Avola, Nonna</i>
A Planet, <i>Pianeta</i>	A Son in-law, <i>Género</i>
The East Wind, <i>Levan-te</i>	A Daughter in-law, <i>Nuóra</i>
The West Wind, <i>Ponen-te</i>	A Boy, <i>Garzone</i>
The North Wind, <i>Tra-montana</i>	A Girl, <i>Giovanetta</i>
The South Wind, <i>Ostro</i>	A Maid or Virgin, <i>Zittella, Vèrgine</i>
The Tide, <i>Marea, Mareggiata</i>	A little Girl, <i>Fanciulla, donzellina</i>
The Stream, <i>la Corrente</i>	A little Boy, <i>Fanciullo, Bambino</i>
A Man, <i>Uómo</i>	An old Man, <i>Vecchio</i>
A Woman, <i>Donna</i>	An old woman, <i>Vecchia</i>
A Bridegroom, <i>Sposo</i>	Bread, <i>Pane</i>
A Bride, <i>Sposa</i>	A Pye, <i>Un Pasticcio</i>
A Wife, <i>Moglie</i>	The Sun-rising, <i>Il tramontar del sole</i>
A Husband, <i>Marito</i>	The Morning, <i>L' Auróra, la mattina</i>
A young Man, <i>Giovane M.</i>	The Evening, <i>La Sera</i>
A young Woman, <i>Donzella, Giovane F.</i>	Noon, <i>Il mezzo di</i>
A Father, <i>Padre</i>	Midnight, <i>La mézza notte</i>
A Mother, <i>Madre</i>	A Street, <i>Strada</i>
A Son, <i>Figlio</i>	A Town, <i>Borgo, Castello</i>
A Daughter, <i>Figlia</i>	A House, <i>Casa</i>
	A Palace, <i>Palazzo</i>
	A Spirit, <i>Spirito</i>

A Plant, <i>Pianta</i>	A Son in-law, <i>Généro</i>
Grass, <i>Gramigna</i>	A Daughter in-law, <i>Nuôra</i>
The Rain-bow, <i>Iride</i>	A Father in-law, <i>Padrigna</i>
Water, <i>Acqua</i>	A Mother in-law, <i>Subêra</i>
Wine, <i>Vino</i>	A Nephew, <i>Nepote</i>
Fish, <i>Pesce</i>	A God Father, <i>Sântolo</i>
A Dish, <i>Piátto</i>	The Leg, <i>Gamba</i>
A Napkin, <i>Salviétta</i>	The Foot, <i>Piede</i>
A Table Cloth, <i>Tovóg- lia</i>	A Finger, <i>Dito</i>
A spoon, <i>un Cucchiáro</i>	The Thumb, <i>Póllice</i>
Beef, <i>del Búe</i>	A Bath, <i>Bagno</i>
Mutton, <i>del Castráto</i>	A Shop, <i>Bottega</i>
Vcal, <i>del Vitello</i>	A Way, <i>Strada</i>
Lamb, <i>del Agnello</i>	An Inn, <i>Osteria</i>
A Cock, <i>un Gallo</i>	A Lock, <i>Serratura</i>
A Hen, <i>una Gallina</i>	A Key, <i>Chiave</i>
The Soul, <i>ánima</i>	A Well, <i>Pozzo</i>
A Brother in-law, <i>Cognato</i>	A Pump, <i>Pompa</i>
	Beer, <i>Birra</i>

* * It is observed in my *Rules for the French Tongue*, that I think it needless to fill Grammars with a tedious Vocabulary of dry Words, which serve to very little Purpose, unless to enlarge the Books, and I repeat the same here, that I have always found a greater Improvement among my Scholars; by their Writing down, and making a Collection daily from the Dictionary, of Words in both Languages, and for this Reason no more are here set down, for I would not have my Scholars talk like Parrots, without understanding; but apply themselves to the various Signification of Words, which can be best learnt from the Dictionary only.

Numbers, *I Numeri.*

1	2	3	4	5	6
Uno,	duoi,	tre,	quattro,	cinque,	sei,
8	9	10	11	12	13
otto,	nove,	dieci,	undici,	dodici,	trédici,
15	16	17	18		
quindici,	sedici,	dieci sette,	dieci otto,		
20	21	30	40		
vinti,	vinto uno,	trenta,	quaranta,		
60	70	80	90	100	
sessanta,	settanta,	ottanta,	nonanta,	cento,	
300	1000	100,000	1,000,000		
trecento,	mille,	cento mila,	millone,	or migliaia	

Ordinal Numbers.

The first, <i>primo</i>	The sixteenth,
The second, <i>secondo</i>	<i>sesto</i>
The third, <i>terzo</i>	The seventeenth,
The fourth, <i>quarto</i>	<i>settimo</i>
The fifth, <i>quinto</i>	The eighteenth,
The sixth, <i>sesto</i>	<i>ottavo</i>
The seventh, <i>settimo</i>	The nineteenth,
The eighth, <i>ottavo</i>	<i>nono</i>
The ninth, <i>nono</i>	The twentieth, <i>decimo</i>
The tenth, <i>décimo</i>	The twenty-first,
The eleventh, <i>undécimo</i>	<i>undécimo primo</i>
The twelfth, <i>duodécimo</i>	The hundredth, <i>centesimo</i>
The thirteenth, <i>décimo</i>	The thousandth, <i>millesimo</i>
<i>terzo</i>	
The Fourteenth, <i>décimo</i>	The middlemost, <i>mezzo</i>
<i>quarto</i>	The Last, <i>ultimo</i> .
The fifteenth, <i>décimo</i>	
<i>quinto</i>	

Concerning

4.

1 am—are
2 cred—ere
3 sent—ire

erò, erài, erà, erémo, eréte, eránno
erò, erài, erà, erémo, eréte, eránno
irò, irài, irà, irémo, iréte, iránno

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

5.

1 am—are
2 cred—ere
3 sent—ire

a, i, iámo, áte, ino
i, a, iámo, éte, ano, & ino
i, a, iámo, íte, ano & ino.

9.

ando
endo
endo

1 am—are
2 cred—ere
3 sent—ire

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COM-
MON.

10.

1 am—are
2 cred—ere
3 sent—ire

Sing. áto M áta F Plur. áti M áte F
úto M úta F úti M úte F
íto M íta F íti M íte F

Note, The Terminations of the Verbs in this Table are accented, that the Learner may distinguish more readily between the *Grave* and *Acute* Accent; but it is to be passed that the *Grave* is used on particular Words and Verbs that Reason, to avoid Trouble, not com-

Concerning the ITALIAN VERBS.

AFTER that the Learner has made himself perfect in the *Auxiliary Verbs* *Have* to have, and *Essere* to be, before set down Page 36, he ought to begin to conjugate the *Verbs Regular*, which he will find easy to be performed by the annexed *Table of Verbs*: It may however be necessary to make a few Remarks here, that may be assisting to him in the Formation of the *Moods* and *Tenses*.

I. The Verbs of the *Italian Tongue* may be said to consist only of three Conjugations, tho' Grammarians do frequently distinguish between *tre* long, and *tre* short, as in the *Latin*; but as this Distinction forms no Variation of Tenses, it is needless to introduce it into Practice, and the Verbs may be distinguished by the three Terminations, as in the annexed *Table*.

II. The first Person of all Tenses is formed from the *Infinitive Mood* of Verbs, by dropping the Termination *re*, and changing the penultimate or last Syllable but one, according to the different Tense of the Verb.

III. The Present Tense of the *Italian Verbs* always ends in *O*, as of *amare*, *temere*, *sentire*, are formed *amo*, *temo*, *sento*; In like manner, the first Person of the Plural Number of this Tense, in general ends in *iamo*.

IV. The Imperfect Tense of all Verbs ends in *vo*, first Person Singular, and in *vamo* first Person Plural;

Plural ; as *ama-vo*, *teme-vo*, *senti-vo*, Singular ; *amavamo*, *crede-vamo*, *senti-vamo*, Plural.

V. The Definite Tense is formed of the Infinitive by changing *re* into *t* ; as of *ama-re*, *teme-re*, *senti-re*, are formed, *ama-i*, *teme-i*, *senti-i* : Note, the second Person singular of Verbs of this Tense, both Regular and Irregular end in *sti*, and the Plural in *ste* ; as *amasti*, *credesti*, *sentisti*, Singular, *amaste*, *credeste*, *sentiste* Plural, and that the third Person Singular is always accented, as *amò*, *temè*, *sentiù*. The like Formation of the Tenses of Verbs will be found throughout the different Moods, by observing the Termination of the Infinitive Mood of each Verb Regular, and bringing that to the ending of each Tense set down in the Table of Verbs annexed.

It may be here observed of Verbs, that in general they be pronounced with the Accent on the Penultima, or last Syllable save one, except in the Future Tense, which has always a grave Accent on the last Syllable of the first and third Person Singular ; as, *amerò* I will love, *amerà* he will love ; the like Accent is also placed on the third Person Singular of the Definite Tense, as is above observed ; as, *amò* he loved, &c. — Let it also be remembered that the Verbs in *Italian*, are most frequently declined, and wrote without the Pronouns Nominative, for which reason they are here not set down, except in the Optative Mood.

A P R A X I S of Verbs Regular, according to the TABLE, in the several CONJUGATIONS.

First CONJUGATION in *are*.

Amare, to love.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>amo</i>	I love, or do love
	<i>ami</i>	thou lovest, or dost love.
	<i>ama</i>	he loveth, or does love.

Plur.	<i>amiamo</i>	we love
	<i>amate</i>	ye love
	<i>amano</i>	they love.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>amave</i>	I did love
	<i>amavi</i>	thou didst love
	<i>amava</i>	he did love

Plur.	<i>amavamo</i>	we did love
	<i>amavate</i>	ye did love
	<i>amavano</i>	they did love.

Definite, or Præterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>amaei</i>	I had loved
	<i>amasti</i>	thou hadst loved
	<i>amo</i>	he had loved

Plur.	<i>amavamo</i>	we had loved
	<i>amavate</i>	ye had loved.
	<i>amavano</i>	they had loved

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	<i>amerò</i>	I shall or will love
	<i>amerai</i>	thou shalt or wilt love
	<i>amerà</i>	he shall or will love
Plur.	<i>ameremo</i>	we shall or will love
	<i>amerete</i>	ye shall or will love
	<i>ameranno</i>	they shall or will love.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	<i>ama</i>	love thou
	<i>ami</i>	let him love

Plur.	<i>amiamo</i>	let us love
	<i>amate</i>	love ye
	<i>amino</i>	let them love.

OPTATIVE OR SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. May.

Sing.	<i>ch'io ami</i>	that I may love
	<i>che tu ami</i>	that thou mayst love
	<i>ch'egli ami</i>	that he may love
Plur.	<i>che noi amiamo</i>	that we may love
	<i>che voi amiate</i>	that ye may love
	<i>ch'eglino amino</i>	that they may love.

Imperfect Tense I. Should, would, &c.

Sing.	<i>amerèi</i>	that I should, &c. love
	<i>amerèsti</i>	that thou shouldst, &c. love
	<i>amerèbbe,</i>	that he should, &c. love
		Plur.

Plur.	<i>amerémmo</i>	that we should, &c. love
	<i>ameréste</i>	that ye should, &c. love.
	<i>amerébbero</i>	that they should, &c. love.

Imperfect II. Might.

Sing.	<i>ch'io amassi</i>	that I might love
	<i>che tu amassi</i>	that thou mightst love
	<i>ch'egli amasse</i>	that he might love

Plur.	<i>che noi amassimo</i>	that we might love
	<i>che voi amaste</i>	that ye might love
	<i>ch'eglino amassero</i>	that they might love

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Amando, loving.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Masc.	Fem.	
<i>amato</i>	<i>amata</i>	Sing. } loved.
<i>amati</i>	<i>amate</i>	Plur. }

Note, The Gerunds of Verbs are rendered by the Infinitive Mood, with *di*, *nel*, *col*, *a*, *da*, *per*, or other Article before them, See Ch. IV. Rule 16. &c. Gerunds also are sometimes taken in an absolute Sense; as, *avendo a scrivere*, having occasion to write.



C O M.

COMPOUND TENSES.

THE Compound Tenses of this and other Verbs, are formed as in *English* and *French*, that is, by bringing the Tenses of the Auxiliary Verb *Havere* to have, to the Participle Common of other Verbs, as is before observed in this Grammar, Page 39, and in my *Rules* for the *French* Tongue. Example,

Present	<i>Hô amato</i>	I have loved, &c.
Imperfect	<i>Havéus amato</i>	I had loved, &c.
Future	<i>Haverô amato</i>	I shall, or will have loved.

And the like, in other Compound Tenses, formed of this Verb *Havere*, and the Participle Passive or Common.

* * The Verbs in *av*, are all conjugated alike, except four, that is, *andare*, *dare*, *fare*, *stare*, of which hereafter.

Note also, That the Auxiliary Verb *Hô* I have, forms the Compound Tenses of the Active Voice, and *Son* I am, with the Participle Common, forms the Passive Voice of Verbs.

Second CONJUGATION in *ere*, both long and short.

Credere, to believe.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>Crédo</i>	I believe, or do believe
	<i>crédi</i>	thou believest, &c.
	<i>créde</i>	he believeth, &c.
Plur.	<i>crédiámo</i>	we believe
	<i>credéte</i>	ye believe
	<i>crédono</i>	they believe.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>Credévo</i>	I did believe
	<i>credévi</i>	thou didst believe
	<i>credéva</i>	he did believe
Plur.	<i>credévámo</i>	we did believe
	<i>credéváte</i>	ye did believe
	<i>credéváno</i>	they did believe.

Definite or Preterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>Credei or credette</i>	I had believed
	<i>credesti</i>	thou hadst believe
	<i>cr. de or credette</i>	he had believed
Plur.	<i>credemmo</i>	we had believed
	<i>credeste</i>	ye had believed
	<i>credérone, or, credettero</i>	they had believed.

Futura

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	<i>Credetò</i>	I shall or will believe
	<i>credetrai</i>	thou shalt or wilt believe
	<i>credetirà</i>	he shall or will believe
Plur.	<i>credetemo</i>	we shall or will believe
	<i>credetete</i>	ye shall or will believe
	<i>credetanno</i>	they shall or will believe.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	<i>Credi</i>	believe thou
	<i>creda</i>	let him believe
Plur.	<i>crediamo</i>	let us believe
	<i>credete</i>	believe ye
	<i>credano</i>	let them believe.

OPTATIVE or SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. May.

Sing.	<i>Ch'io creda</i>	that I may believe
	<i>che tu creda</i>	thou may'st believe
	<i>ch'egli creda</i>	he may believe
Plur.	<i>che noi crediamo</i>	we may believe
	<i>che voi crediate</i>	you may believe
	<i>ch'eglino credano</i>	they may believe.

Imperfect I. Should, would.

Sing.	<i>Crederti</i>	I should believe
	<i>crederti</i>	thou shouldst believe
	<i>crederti</i>	he should believe
	<i>crederti</i>	
Plur.	<i>credetemo</i>	we should believe
	<i>credeteste</i>	you should believe
	<i>credetessero, or,</i>	they should believe.
	<i>credetiano.</i>	

Imperfect

Imperfect II. Might, &c.

Sing.	<i>Credessi</i>	that I might believe
	<i>credessi</i>	thou might'st believe
	<i>credesse</i>	he might believe
Plur.	<i>credessimo</i>	we might believe
	<i>credesset</i>	you might believe
	<i>credessero</i>	they might believe.

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Credendo, believing.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Mas.	Fem.	} believed.
<i>Creduto</i>	<i>Creduta</i> Sing.	
<i>Creduti</i>	<i>Credute</i> Plur.	

COMPOUND TENSES.

Present	<i>Ho creduto</i>	I have believed, &c.
Imperfect	<i>havevo creduto</i>	I had believed, &c.
Future	<i>havevo creduto</i>	I shall have believed.
And the like in other Compound Tenses.		

Third CONJUGATION in *ire*.

Sentire, to hear.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. Do.

Sing.	<i>Sento</i>	I hear, or do hear
	<i>senti</i>	thou hearest
	<i>sente</i>	he hears

Plur.

Plur.	<i>sentiāmo</i>	we hear
	<i>sentite</i>	ye hear
	<i>sentono</i>	they hear.

Imperfect Tense. Did.

Sing.	<i>Sentivo</i>	I did hear
	<i>sentivi</i>	thou didst hear
	<i>sentiva</i>	he did hear
Plur.	<i>sentiwāmo</i>	we did hear
	<i>sentiwāte</i>	ye did hear
	<i>sentiwāno</i>	they did hear

Definite or Preterit Tense. Had.

Sing.	<i>Sentii</i>	I heard, or had heard
	<i>sentisti</i>	thou heardst
	<i>senti</i>	he heard
Plur.	<i>sentimmo</i>	we heard
	<i>sentistis</i>	ye heard
	<i>sentiramo</i>	they heard.

Future Tense. Shall or will.

Sing.	<i>Sentirò</i>	I shall or will hear
	<i>sentirai</i>	thou shalt or will hear
	<i>sentirà</i>	he shall or will hear
Plur.	<i>sentiremo</i>	we shall or will hear
	<i>sentirete</i>	ye shall or will hear
	<i>sentiranno</i>	they shall or will hear.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing.	<i>Senti</i>	hear thou
	<i>senta</i>	let him hear
Plur.	<i>sentiamo</i>	let us hear
	<i>sentite</i>	hear ye
	<i>sentano</i>	let them hear.

OPTATIVE or SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present Tense. May, or can.

Sing.	<i>Cb'io senta</i>	that I may hear
	<i>che tu senta, ti</i>	that thou mayst hear
	<i>cb'egli senta</i>	that he may hear
Plur.	<i>che noi sentiamo</i>	that we may hear
	<i>che voi sentiate</i>	that ye may hear
	<i>cb'eglino sentano</i>	that they may hear.

Imperfect I. Should, would, &c.

Sing.	<i>Sentirei</i>	I should, &c. hear
	<i>sentiresti</i>	thou shouldst hear
	<i>sentirebbe</i>	He should hear
Plur.	<i>sentiremmo</i>	we should hear
	<i>sentireste</i>	ye should hear
	<i>sentirebbero</i>	they should hear

Imperfect II. Might, &c.

Sing.	<i>Che sentissi</i>	that I might hear
	<i>che sentissi</i>	thou might'st hear
	<i>che sentisse</i>	he might hear

S

Plur.

Plur.	<i>che sentissimo</i>	we might hear
	<i>che sentiste</i>	you might hear
	<i>che sentissero</i>	they might hear.

PARTICIPLE ACTIVE.

Sentendo, hearing.

PARTICIPLE PASSIVE, or COMMON.

Masc.	Fem.	
<i>Sentito</i>	<i>Sentita</i>	Sing.
<i>Sentiti</i>	<i>Sentite</i>	Plur.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Present	<i>Ho sentito</i>	I have heard
Imperfect	<i>havevo sentito</i>	I had heard
Future	<i>avrò sentito</i>	I shall have heard.

And the like in other Compound Tenses.

Of VERBS PASSIVE, RECIPROCAL, and NEUTER.

THE Verb *Passive* is formed as in *English* and *French*, by the addition of the Auxiliary Verb *Sono* I am, in all its Moods and Tenses to the *Participle Active*, or *Common*, as will appear from the following Example,

Essere amato, to be loved.

		<i>Present Tense.</i>
Sing.	<i>Sono amato</i>	I am loved
	<i>sei amato</i>	thou art loved
	<i>è amato</i>	he is loved

Plur.

Plur.	<i>fiamo amati</i>	we are loved.
	<i>sete, or siete amati</i>	ye are loved
	<i>sono amati</i>	they are loved.

Imperfect Tense,

Sing.	<i>Ero amato</i>	I was loved
	<i>eri amato</i>	thou wast loved
	<i>era amato</i>	he was loved
Plur.	<i>erámo amati</i>	we were loved
	<i>eráte amati</i>	ye were loved
	<i>erano amati</i>	they were loved.

And the like throughout the several Moods and Tenses: See Page 42. And here *Note*, that the *Participle* changes its Number and Gender as the Noun it agrees with, or the occasion requires, and frequently agrees with the Noun that follows; Example,

Having seen a Woman, *avendo veduta una donna.*

He has said very fine things, *egli hà dette bellissime cose.*

VERBS *Reciprocal* take the Pronouns *mi* myself, *ti* thyself, *si* himself, herself, *ci* ourselves, *vi* yourselves, *si* themselves, before them only; as the *Italians* seldom make use of the Pronouns Nominative in conjugating their Verbs; I shall set down an Example.

mi levo

ti levi

si leva

ci leviamo

I rise

thou dost rise

he rises

we rise

S 2

vi

<i>vi levete</i>	ye rise
<i>si levano</i>	they rise
<i>mi son levato</i>	I am risen, &c.

VERBS *Neuter* are those Verbs that in the Compound Tenses, are conjugated by the Auxiliary *avere*; as *hò parlato, hanno tremato*, and never by the Auxiliary *essere*. And Note the Participle always ends in *o*, be it either Singular or Plural Number, Masculine or Feminine; as, the Queen has supped, *la Regina hà cenato*, your Friends have slept, *i vostri amici hanno dormitto*.

Of V E R B S I R R E G U L A R.

THE Formation of the Irregular Verbs in *Italian* does greatly vary, by reason of the liberty taken by Authors, both in Prose and Poetry; for this cause I shall set down in an Alphabetical List, the several Tenses of these Verbs, according to the different Conjugations; and the Learner will observe, that altho' the formation of Tenses is from the Infinitive Mood of Verbs, there are frequent variations from this Rule.

I. *Tenere* to keep, *Venire* to come, take the addition of a *g*, and make *tengo, vengo*, and in order to soften the sound, the *g* is also transposed and forms *vegno, tegno*; *dovere* to owe, makes *devo*.

II. The letter *l* in Verbs, takes *g* before *o*; as *dolere* to grieve forms *dolgo*, and sometimes an *i* is assumed to soften the sound, and makes *doglio*; *valere*, to be able, makes *vaglia*, *volere* to be willing, *voglio*.

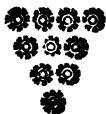
III.

III. The letter *r* in the penultima of the Infinitive Mood, is frequently changed into *i*, as of *parere* to seem, comes *paio*; of *morire* to die *moio*, and sometime *muoro*.

IV. The letter *c* of the same penultima is doubled, and makes *ci*; as *piacere* to please, makes *piaccio*, &c.

V. Those that understand the *Latin* Tongue will find great ease in forming and conjugating the *Verbs Irregular* by giving attention particularly to the Definite Tense and the Participle; as for Example, when the Præterit or Definite Tense of the *Latin* is with an *x*, it is in *Italian* changed into double *ss*, as *dixi*, *disssi*; if there be two different Consonants, the first is rendered the same as the last, as *scripsi*, *scrissi*: And the like attention will point out also the Participle; as of *scriptum* is *scritto*; *factum*, *fatto*; *lectum*, *letto*: But not to dwell longer on these Particulars, the different formation of *Verbs Irregular* will be best learnt by a due attention to the Verbs themselves, as set down in the following List.

Note, the small Figures before the Tenses of these Verbs following, referr to the like Tenses in the *General Table of Verbs*.



VERBS *Irregular*

of the First CONJUGATION in *are*, are four.

I. Andare, *to go*.

1.
Vado, vò
vai
va
andiamo
andate
vanno

2.
Andavo
andavi
andava
andavamo
andavate
andavano

3.
Andai
andasti
andò
andammo
andaste
andarono.

4.
Anderò, andrò
anderai
anderà

anderemo
anderete
anderanno

5.
Va
vada, vadi
andiamo
andate
vadano, vadino

6.
Vada, vadi
vada, vadi
vada, vadi
andiamo
andiate
vadano, vadino

7.
Anderei, andrei
andereste, andrete
anderebbe, andrebbe
anderemmo, andremmo
andereste, andrete
anderebbero, andrebbero

8.

Andaffi
andaffi
andasse
andaffimo
andaste

8.

andaffero

Andando.

9.

Andato, ta
andati, te

10.

N. B. In this Verb, for *andare*, *andate*, *andava*,
and *andato*, it will be found that the Poets use, *gire*,
gite, *giva*, *gito*, of which Verb hereafter.

II. Fare, to do.

Fò,
fai
fà
facciamo
fate
fanno

2.

Facévo
facévi
facéva
facevamo
facevate
facevano

3.

Feci, fei
facesti, festi
fece, fè
facemmo
faceste
fecero

4.

Farò
farai

farà
faremo
farete
faranno.

5.

Fà
faccia
facciamo
fate
facciano, faccino

6.

Faccia
faccia
faccia
facciamo
facciate
facciano.

7.

Farei
faresti
farebbe
faremmo
fareste
farebbero

8.
Faceffi
faceffi
faceffe
faceffimo
facefte
faceffero.

9.
Facendo.

10.
Fatto, ta
Fatti, te.

III. Dare, *to givè.*

Dò
dai
dà
diamo
date
danno

2.
Davo
davi
dava
davamo
davate
davano

3.
Diedi, detti
deffi
diede, dette, diè
demmo
deffe,
dièdero, dettero

4.
Darò
darai
darà
daremo
darete
daranno.

5.
Dà
dia
diamo
date
diano.

6.
Dia
dia, dii
dia
diamo
diate
diano, diino

7.
Darei
daresti
darebbe
daremmo
dareste
darebbero.

8.
Deffi
deffi
deffe
deffimo
deffe, deffi
deffero, deffino.

9.
Dando.

16.
Datto, ta
datti, te.

V. Stare, *to be, to*
stand, &c.

1.
Stò,
stai
stà
stiammo
state
stanno.

2.
Stavo
stavi
stava
stavamo
stavate
stavano.

3.
Stetti
stesti
stette
stemmo
steste
stettero.

4.
Starò
starai
starà
staremo

starete
staranno.

5.
Stà
stia
siamo
state
stiano, stino
6.

Stia
stia, stii
stia
siamo
stiate
stiano, stino
7.

Starei
staresti
starebbe
staremmo
stareste
starebbero.

8.
Steffi
stessi
stesse
stessimo
steste
stessero

9.
Stando.

10.
Stato, stata
stati, state.

Irregu-

Irregular VERBS

of the Second CONJUGATION in *Ere*.*

I. Ardere, to burn.

1.	Ardo, ardi, arde ardiamo ardete ardono.	arderà arderemo arderete arderonò.	
2.	Ardevo ardevi ardeva ardevamo ardevate ardevano.	Ardi arda ardiamo ardete ardano.	5.
3.	Arfi ardefti arfe ardemmo ardefte arfero	Arda arda arda ardiamo ardiate ardano.	6.
4.	Arderò arderai	Arderei arderefti arderebbe arderemmo arderefte arderebbero.	7.

8.

* Verba in *ere* are both long and short in the Infinitive Mood; but as is observed in Page 185. no difference is made thereby in forming their Tenses: Those that have *ere* long are only twenty-two, and will be marked *ere*, the rest are short.

Ardeffi 8.
ardeffi
ardeffe
ardeffimo
ardeste
ardeffero

Ardendo. 9.

Arfo, fa, 10.
arfi, fe

II. Cadére, *to fall.*

1.
Cado, caggio,
cadi
cade
caddiamo, caggiamo
cadete
cadono, caggiono.

2.
Cadevo, vi, va.
cadevamo, ate, ano

3.
Caddi, cadei, cadetti
cadeffi
cadde, cade, cadette
cademmo
cadeffe
caddero, caderono, ca-
dettero, caddano.

4.
Caderò, rai, rà
caderemo, rete, rono.

5.
Cadi
cada, caggia
cadiamo,
cadéte
cadano
Cada, ca 6.
cada, caggia
cada, caggia
caggia
cadiamo
cadiate
cadano.

7.
Caderei
cadereffi
caderebbe
caderemmo
cadereffe
caderebbero.

8.
Cadeffi, fi, fe
cadeffimo
cadeffe
cadeffero.

9.
Cadendo.

10.
Caduto, ta
caduta, te.

III. Cuócere, *to boil.*

1.
Cuoco, ci, ce
cuociamo

cuociamo
cuocete, cocete
cuocono, cuociano.

2.

Cuocevo, vi, va
cuoceviamo
cuoceviato
cuocevano

3.

Coffi
cuocesti, cocesti
coffe
cuocemmo, cocemmo
cuoceste, coceste
coffero.

4.

Cuocerò, rai, rà
cuoceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Cuoci
cuoca
cuociamo
cuocete
cuocano.

6.

Cuoca, ca, ca
cuociamo, iate, ano.

7.

Cuocerei
cuocereffi
cuocerebbe
cuoceremmo
cuocereffe
cuocerebbero

8.

Cuoceffi, fi, fe
cuoceffimo
cuoceffe
cuoceffero

9.

Cuocendo, cocente

10.

Cotto, ta
cotti, te

IV. Concedere, *to* *agere.*

1.

Concedo, di, de
concediamo
concedete
concedono

2.

Concedevo, vi, va
concedevamo, vate, vano

3.

Conceffi, concedei, detti
concedesti
conceffe
concedemmo
concedeste
concedero, conceffero

4.

Concederò, rai, rà
Concederemo, rete, ranno

5.

Concedi
conceda

concedamo

concediamo.
concedete,
concedano.

6.
Conceda, da, da
concediamo
concediate
concedano.

7.
Concederei
concederesti
concederebbe
concederemmo
concedereste
concederebbero

8.
Concedessi, i, e
concedessimo
concedeste
concedessero.

9.
Concedendò.

10.
Concesso, la
concessi, se.

*In like manner,
Succedere, to succeed.*

V. Conducere, con-
durre, to conduct.

1.
Conduco, ci, ce
conduciamo
conducete
conducono.

2.
Conducevo, vi, va
conducevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Condussi
conducesti
conduste
conducemmo
conduceste
conducessero.

4.
Condurrò, rai, rà
conduremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Conduci
conduca
conduciamo
conducete
conducano

6.
Conduca, a, a
conduciamo
conduciate
conducano.

7.
Condurrei
condurresti
condurrebbe
condurremmo
condurreste
condurrebbero

8.
Conducessi, i, e
conducessimo
conduceste
conducessero.

T

9.

9.
Conducendo

10.
Condotto, ta
condutti, te.

VI. Chiudere, *to shut.*

1.
Chiudo, di, de
chiudiamo
chiudete
chiudono.

2.
Chiudevo, vi, va
chiudevamo, vate, vano

3.
Chiusi
chiudesti
chiuse
chiudemmo
chiudeste
chiusero.

4.
Chiuderò, rai, rà
chiuderemo, rete, ranno

5.
Chiudi, da
chiudiamo, dete, dano

6.
Chiuda, da, da
chiudiamo
chiudiate
chiudano.

7.
Chiuderei
chiuderesti

chiuderebbe
chiuderemmo
chiudereste
chiuderebbero.

8.
Chiudereffi, i, e
chiudereffimo
chiudereste
chiudereffero.

9.
Chiudendo.

10.
Chiuso, fa
chiusi, fe.

*In like manner its com-
pound*

Conchiudere, *to conclude.*

VII. Cogliere, *to gather.*

1.
Coglio, colgo
cogli
coglie
cogliamo
cogliete
cogliono, colgono.

2.
Coglievo, vi, va
coglievamo, vate, vano.

3.
Colsi
cogliesti
colse
cogliemmo

colgieste

coglieste
colsero.

4.
coglierò, corrò
coglierai, rà
coglieremo, rete, ranno.

5.
cogli,
coglia, colga
cogliamo
cogliete
cogliano.

6.
Coglia, colga
coglia, a
cogliamo
cogliate
cogliano.

7.
Coglierei
coglieresti
coglierebbe
coglieremmo
cogliereste
coglierebbero

8.
Coglieffi, i, e
coglieffimo
coglieffe
coglieffero.

9.
Cogliendo.

10.
Colto, ta
colti, te.

*In like manner its com-
pounds*

Accogliere, to gather
Togliere, to take away
Sciogliere, to loose
Distogliere, to remove.

VIII. Correre, *ta* *run.*

1.
Corro, i, e
corriamo
correte
corrono.

2.
Correvo, vi, va
correvamo, ate, ano.

3.
Corri
corresti
corse
corremmo
correste
corsero.

4.
Correrò, ral, rà
correremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Corri, a
corriamo
correte
corrano

6.
Corra, a, a
corriamo

T 2

corriate

corriate
corrano.

7.

Correrei
correreffi
correrebbe
correremmo
correreste
correrebbero.

8.

Corressi, si, se
corressimo
correste
corressero.

9.

Correndo.

10.

Corso, fa
corsi, se.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Accorrere, to run unto

Concorrere, to run to-
gether.

IX. Conoscere, to
know.

1.

Conosco, ci, ce
conosciamo, cete, cono

2.

Conoscevo, vi, va
conoscevamo, vate, vate

3.

Conobbi

conosceffi
conobbe
conoscemmo
conosceste
conobbero.

4.

Conoscerò, rai, rà
conosceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Conosci, e, a
conosciamo
conoscete
conoscano.

6.

Conosca, a, a
conosciamo
conosciate
conoscano.

7.

Conoscerei
conoscereffi
conoscerebbe
conosceremmo
conoscereste
conoscerebbero.

8.

Conosceffi, si, se
conosceffimo
conosceffeste
conosceffero.

9.

Conoscendo.

10.

Conosciuto, ta
conosciuti, te.

X.

X. Crescere, *to grow.*

1.
Cresco, ci, ce
cresciamo
crescete
crescono

2.
Crescevo, vi, va
crescevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Crebbi
crecesti
crebbe
crescemmo
cresceste
crebbero.

4.
Crescerò, rai, rà
cresceremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Cresci, ca
cresciamo.
crescete
crescano.

6.
Cresca, a, a
cresciamo
cresciate
crescano.

7.
Crescerei
crescereste
crescerebbe
cresceremmo.

crescereste
crescerebbero.

8.
Cresceffi, fi, fe
crescessimo
cresceceste
cresceffero.

9.
Crescendo.

10.
Cresciuto, ta
cresciuti, te.

**XI. Cingere, *cig-
nere, to gird.***

1.
Cingo, gi, ge
cingiamo
cingete
cingono.

2.
Cingevo, vi, va
cingevamo, vate, vano

3.
Cinsi
cingesti
cinsi
cingemmo
cingeste
cinsero.

4.
Cingerò, rai, rà
cingeremo, rete, ranno.

T 3. 5.

5.
Cingi, ga-
cingiamo
cingate
cingano.

6.
Cinga, a, a
cingiamo
cingiate
cingano.

7.
Cingerei
cingeresti
cingerebbe
cingeremmo.
cingereste
cingerebbero.

8.
Cingessi, i, e.
cingessimmo
cingeste
cingessero.

9.
Cingendo.

10.
Cinto, ta
cinti, te.

*In like manner,
Spingere, to thirst.*

XII. Dovère, to owe.

I.
Devo, debbo, deggio
devi, debbi
deve, debbe, de

dobbiamo
dovete
debbono, devono, deo-
no.

2.
Dovevo, vi, va
dovevamo, vatè, vano

3.
Dovei, dovetti
dovesti
dovette, dove
dovemmo
doveste
dovettero, doverno.

4.
Doverò, dovrò
doverai
doverà
doveremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Devi
debba
dobbiamo
dobbiare
dobbano.

6.
Debba, a, a
dobbiamo
dobbiare
dobbano.

7.
Doverei
doveresti
doverebbe
doveremmo

dovereste

dovereste 4.
doveteбbero 8.

Doveffi
doveffi
doveffe
doveffimo
doveffe
doveffero.

Dovendo. 9.

Dovato, a 10.
dovuti, e

XIII. Dolére, *ta ach.*

Dolérfi, *to complain.*

A Verb Reciprocal.

1.
Mi doglio, dolgo
ti duoli
fi duole
ci dogliamo
vi dolete
fi dogliono, doglono.

2.
Mi dolevo, vi, va
ci dolevamo
vi dolevate
fi dolevano.

3.
Mi dolfi, dolei
ti dolesti
fi dolse

ci dolemmo
vi doleste
fi dolsero.

4.
Mi dorrò, dolerò
ti dorrà
fi dorrà
ci dorremo
vi dorrete
fi dorranno

5.
Duoliti
doggafi, dogliafi
dogliamoci
doletevi
dogganofi, doglianofi

6.
Mi dogga, doglia, a,
ci dogliamo
vi dogliate
fi doggano.

7.
Mi dorrei
ti doresti
fi dorrebbe
ci dorremmo
vi dorreste
fi dorrebbero.

8.
Mi dolessi
ti dolessi
fi dolesse
ci dolessimo
vi doleste
fi dolessero.

^{9.}
Dolendofi.

^{10.}
Doluto, ta
doluti, e.

In like manner its Compounds

Condolere, *to condole*
Ridolere, *to grieve.**

XIV. Distinguere, *to distinguish.*

^{1.}
Distinguo, gui, gue
distinguiamo, ate, ono

^{2.}
Distinguevo, vi, va
distinguevamo, vate, vano.

^{3.}
Distinfi
distinguesti
distinse
distinguemmo
distingueste
distinsero.

^{4.}
Distinguerò, rai, rà
distingueremo
distinguerete

distingueranno.

^{5.}
Distingui, a
distinguiamo, ate, ano.

^{6.}
Distingua, a, à
distinguiamo, ate, ano.

^{7.}
Distinguerai
distingueresti
distinguerrebbe
distingueremmo
distinguereste
distinguerrebbero.

^{8.}
Distinguessi, essi, esse
distinguessimo
distingueste
distinguessero.

^{9.}
Distinguendo.

^{10.}

* Note, I. All Verbs Reciprocal are conjugated with the Pronouns Personal, as *penterfi, to repent; ricordarsi, to remember, &c.*

II. Dolere, also is a Verb Impersonal in the third Person Singular only, as, *he has the Head-ach, gli duole la testa; they have the Head-ach, duole loro la testa.*

10.
Dinstinto, ta
distinti, te.
In like manner,
Estinguere, to put out.

XV. Diffendere, to defend.

1.
Diffendo, i, e.
diffendiamo
diffendete
diffendono.
2.
Diffendevo, vi, va.
diffendevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Difesi,
diffendesti
difese.
diffendemmo, este
difesero.

4.
Difenderò, rai, rà
difenderemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
Difendi, da
difendiamo, etc, ano.

6.
Difenda, da, da
difendiamo, ate, ano.

7.
Difenderei

diffendereste
diffenderebbe
difenderemmo
diffendereste
diffenderebbero.

8.
Difendessi, i, e
difendessimo,
difendeste
difendessero.

9.
Difendendo.

10.
Difeso, a
difesi, e

In like manner,
Decidere, to decide.

XVI. Ergere, to dress. *erect. or build*

1.
Ergo, gi, ge
ergiamo, etc, ono

2.
Ergevo, vi, va
ergevamo, vate, vano

3.
Ersi
ergeste
erle
ergemmo
ergeste
erlerò.

Ergerò, rai, rà
ergeremo, rete, ranno.

Ergi, ga
ergiamo
ergete, ano.

Erga, a, a
ergiamo
ergiate
ergano.

Ergerei
ergereſti
ergerebbe
ergeremmo
ergereſte
ergerebbero.

Ergeſſi, i, e
ergeſſimo
ergeſte
ergeſſero.

Ergendo.

Erto, a
erti, e.

In like manner,
Eriggere, *to erect.*

XVII. Fondere, *to melt.*

Fondi, di, de
fondiamo
fondete
fondono.

Fondevo, vi, va
fondevamo, vate, vano.

Fuſi
fondeſti
fuſe
fondemmo
fondeſte
fuſero.

Fonderò, rai, rà
fonderemo, rete, ranno.

Fondi, da
fondiamo, etc, ano.

Fonda, da, da
fondiamo, ate, ano.

Fonderei, ereſte, erebbe
fonderemmo, ereſte, eb-
bero.

The Verbs Eſſere, and Avère, are not here ſet down.
See Page 36.

8.
Fondessi, *fi, se*
fondessimo, *este, essero.*

9.
Fondendo.

10. 9
Fuso, fonduto, a
fusi, fonduti, e.

*In like manner its com-
pound*

Confondere, *to confound.*

XVIII. Giacere, *to* *lye down.*

1.
Giaccio,
giaci
giace
giacciamo
giacete
giacciono.

2.
Giacevo, *vi, va*
giacevamo, *vate, vano.*

3.
giacqui
giacesti
giacche, *giacque*
giacemmo
giaceste
giacquero.

4.
Giacerò, *rai, rà*

giaceremo, *rete, ranno.*

5.
Giacci
giaccia
giacciamo
giaccete
giacciano.

6.
Giaccia, *a, a*
giacciamo
giacciate
giacciano.

7.
Giacerei
giaceresti
giacerebbe
giaceremmo
giacereste
giacerebbero.

8.
Giaceffi, *fi, se*
giaceffimo
giaceste
giaceffero.

9.
Giacendo.
10.
Giacciuto, *a*
giacciuti, *e.*

XIX. Godere, *to* *rejoice.*

1.
Godo, *di, de,*
Godiamo, *dete, dono*
2.

2.
Godevo, vi, va
godevamo, vate, vano

3.
Godei, godetti
godesti
godette
godemmo
godeste
godettero.

4.
Goderò, rai, rà
goderemo, retè, ranne.

5.
Godi, da
godiamo
godete
godano.

6.
Goda, a, a
godiamo
godiate
godano.

7.
Goderei
godereffi
goderebbe
goderemmo
godereste
goderebbero.

8.
Godeffi, fi, fe
godeffimo, este, effero.

9.
Godendo.

10.
Goduto, a
goduti, e

XX. Giungere, to
join.

1.
Giungo, gi, ge
giungiamo, ate, ono

2.
Giungevo, vi, va
giungivamo, ate, ano.

3.
Giunsi
giungeffi
giunse
giungemmo
giungeste
giunsero.

4.
Giungerò, rai, rà
giungeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Giungi, ga
giungiamo
giungete
giungano.

6.
Giunga, ga, ga
giungiamo, ate, ano.

7.
Giungerei
giungereffi
giungerebbe
giungeremmo, reffe, reb-
bero.

XX.

XX. Muovere, to
move.

1.
Muovo, vi, ve
muoviamo, vete, vono

2.
Muovevo, vi, va
muovevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Mossi
muovesti
mosse
muovemmo
muoveste
mossero.

4.
Muoverò, rai, rà
muoveremo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
muovi, va
muoviamo, vete, ano

6.
Muova, a, a
muoviamo, viate, vano

7.
Muoverei, resti, erebbe
muoveremmo, reste,
rebbero.

8.
Muoveffi, ffi, ffe
muoveffimo, fte, ffero.

9.
Muovendo.

10.
Mosso, fa
mossi, fe.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds.*

Amovere
commovere
rimovere.

XXI. Mettere, to
put.

1.
Metto, i, e
mettiamo, tete, tono.

2.
Mettevo, vi, va
mettavamo, vate, vano.

3.
Misi
metteffi
mise
mettemmo
metteste
misero.

4.
Metterò, rai, rà
metteremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Metti, ta
mettiamo
met.ete
mettano.

U

6.

6.
Metta, a, a
mettiamo, tiate, tano.

7.
Metterei
metteresti
metterebbe
metteremmo
mettereste
metterebbero.

8.
Metteffi, fi, se
metteffimo
metteste
metteffero.

9.
Mettendo.

10.
Messo, a
messi, e

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Admettere, *to admit*
promettere, *to promise*
rimettere, *to remit*
commettere, *to commit*
sottomettere, *to submit*,
&c.

XXII. Nascere, *to*
be born.

1.
Nasco, i, e
nasciamo

nascete, cono.

2.
Nascevo, vi, va
nascevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Nacqui
nascesti
nacque
nasceamto
nasceste
nacquero.

4.
Nascerò, rai, rà
nasceremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Nasci, ca
nasciamo
nascete
nascano.

6.
Nasca, a, a
nasciamo, ciate, cano.

7.
Nascerei, resti, rebbe
nasceremmo, restete, reb-
bero.

8.
Nascessi, fi, se
nascessimo, este, essero.

9.
Nascendo.

10.
Nato, a
nati, e.

XXIII.

XXIII. Nascondere,
ascondere, to bide.

1.
Nascondo, di, de
nascondiamo
nascondete
nascondono.

2.
Nascondevo, vi, va
nascondevamo
nascondevate
nascondevano.

3.
Nascondi
nascondesti
nasconde
nascondemmo
nascondeste
nascondono.

4.
Nasconderò, rai, rà
nasconderemo.
nasconderete
nasconderanno.

5.
Nascondi, da
nascondiamo
nascondete
nascondano.

6.
Nasconda, da, da
nascondiamo
nascondiate
nascondano.

7.
Nasconderei
nasconderefti
nasconderebbe
nasconderemmo
nasconderefte
nasconderebbero.

8.
Nascondessi, fi, fe
nascondessimo
nascondeste
nascondessero.

9.
Nascondendo.

10.
Nascondo, a
nascondi, e.

Nuocere, to hurt.

1.
Nuoccio, nuoco
nuoci
nuoce
nuociamo
nuocete
nuocono.

2.
Nuocivo, vi, va
nuocivamo, vate vano.

3.
Nuocui
nuocesti
nuoque
nuocemmo

U 2

nuoceste

nuoceste
nocquero

4.

Nuocerò, rai, rà
nuoceremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Nuoci
nuoccia
nuociamo
nuocete
nuocciano.

6.

Nuoccia, cia, cia
nuociamo
nuoccia te
nuocciano.

7.

Nuocerei
nuoceresti
nuocerebbe
nuoceremmo
nuocereste
nuocerebbero.

8.

Nuoceffi, fi, fe
nuoceffimo
nuoceste
nuoceffero.

9.

Nuocendo.

10.

Nuocciuto, ta
nuocciuti, te.

XXV. Parére, *to ap-pear.*

1.

Paio
pari
pare
pariamo
parete
paiono.

2.

Parevo, vi, va
parevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Parvi
paresti
parve
paremmo
pareste.
parvero.

4.

Parerò, parò
parerai
parerà
pareremo
parerete
pareranno, parrano.

5.

Pari, ra
pariamo
parete
paiano.

6.

paia, a, a
pariamo
pariate
paiano

7.

7.
parrei
parresti
parrebbe
parremmo
parreste
parrebbero.

8.
pareffi, fi, fe
pareffimo
pareste
paressero.

9.
Parendo.

10.
Parso, fa
parsi, se.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Comparére, to compare
Apparére, to appear, &c.

XXVI. Persuadére, to persuade.

1.
Persuado, di, de
persuadiamo
persuadete
persuadono.

2.
persuadevo, vi, va
persuadevamo, vate, va-
no.

3.
Persuasi
persuadesti
persuase
persuademmo
persuadeste
persuasero.

4.
Persuaderò, rai, rà
persuaderemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
Persuadi, da
persuadiamo
persuadete
persuadano.

6.
persuada, da, da
persuadiamo
persuadiate
persuadano.

7.
persuaderei
persuadereffi
persuaderebbe
persuaderemmo
persuadereste
persuaderebbero.

8.
Persuadeffi, fi, fe
persuadeffimo
persuadeste
persuadeffero.

9.
Persuadendo.

^{10.}
Persuasò, fa
persuasì, se.

XXVII. Percuotere,
to strike.

^{1.}
Percuoto, ti, te
percutiamo
percutete
percuotono.

^{2.}
Percuotevo, vi, va
percuotevamo, vate, va-
no.

^{3.}
Percoffi
percuotēsti
percoffe
percuotemmo
percuoteste
percoffero.

^{4.}
Percuoterò, rai, rà
percuoteremo, rete, ran-
no.

^{5.}
Percuoti, ta
percuotiamo
percuotete
percuotano

^{6.}
Percuota, ta, ta
percuotiamo

percuotiate
percuotano.

^{7.}
Percuoterci
percuotereſti
percuoterebbe
percuoteremmo
percuotereſte
percuoterebbero.

^{8.}
Percuoteſſi, ſi, ſe
percuoteſſimo
percuoteſte
percuoteſſero.

^{9.}
Percuotendo.

^{10.}
Percoſſo, fa
percoſſi, ſe.

XXVIII. Piacere, to
please.

^{1.}
Piaccio
piaci
piacce
piacciamo
piacete
piacciono.

^{2.}
Piacevo, vi, va
piacevamo, vate, vano.

^{3.}
Piacqui
piaceſti

piaque

piacque
piacemmo
piaceste
piacquero.

4.
Piacerò, rai, rà
piaceremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Piacci
piaccia
piacciamo
piacete
piacciano.

6.
Piaccia, cia, cia
piacciamo
piacciate
piacciano.

7.
Piacerei
piacereffi
piacerebbe
piaceremmo
piacereste
piacerebbero.

8.
Piaceffi, fi, fe
piaceffimo
piaceste
piaceffero.

9.
Piacendo.

10.
Piacciuto, ta
piacciuti, te.

*In like manner its com-
pounds.*

Dispiacére, *to displease*
Compiacére, *to delight.*

XXIX. Piangere, *to bewail.*

1.
Piango, gi, ge
piangiamo, gete, ono.

2.
Piangevo, vi, va
piangevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Pianfi
piangesti
pianse
piangemmo
piangeste
pianfero.

4.
Piangerò, rai, rà
piangeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Piangi, ga
piangiamo
piangete
piangiano.

6.
Pianga, ga, ga
piangiamo
piangiate
piangiano.

Piangerei

Piangerei
piangerefti
piangerebbe
piangeremmo
piangerefte
piangerebbero.

8.

Piangeffi, ffi, ffe
piangeffimo
piangeffe
piangeffero.

9.

Piangendo.

10.

Pianto, ta
pianti, te

*In like manner its Com-
pound*

Compiangere, *to bemoan,*
Alfo Pingere, *to paint.*

XXX. Potére, *to be*
able.

1.

Posfo
puoi
può
possiamo
potete
possono.

2

Potevo, vi, va
potevamo, vate, vano.

Potetti, potei
potefti
potette, potè
potemmo
poteftè
potettero, poterono.

4.

Potrò, poterò
potrai, rà
poteremo, rette, ranno.

5.

wanting.

6.

Poffa, a, a
possiamo, iate, sano.

7.

Poterei, refti, rebbe
poteremmo, reftè, reb-
bero.

8.

Poteffi, fi, fe
poteffimo
poteftè
poteffero.

9.

Potendo.

10.

Potuto, ta
potuti, te.

XXXI. Ponerè, *to put.*

1.

Pongo
poni

pone

pone
poniamo
ponete
pongono

2.
Ponevo, vi, va
ponevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Posi
ponesti
pose
ponemmo
poneste
posero.

4.
Porrò, rai, rà
porremo, rete, anno.

5.
Poni, ga
poniamo
ponete
pongano.

6.
Ponga, ga, ga
poniamo
poniate
pongano.

7.
Porrei, resti, rebbe
porremmo, reste, rebbe-
ro.

8.
Poneffi, ffi, sse
poneffimo, este, effero.

9.
Ponendo.

10.
Posso, ta
possi, te

*In like manner its com-
pounds*

Riporre, *to replace*
comporre, *to compose*
apporre, *to object.*

XXXII. Prendere, *to take.*

1.
Prendo, di, de
prendiamo, dete, dono,

2.
prendevo, vi, va
prendevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Presi
predesti
prese
prendemmo
prendeste
presero.

4.
Prenderò, rai, rà
prenderemo, rete,
ranno.

5.
Prendi, da
prendiamo, iate, dano.

6.
Prenda, a, a
prendiamo, iate, dano.

7.
Prenderei, resti, rebbe
prenderemmo, restè,
rebbe.

8.
Prendessi, fi, se
prendeſſimo, este, ſſero.

9.
Prendendo.

10.
Preſo, ſa
preſi, ſe.

*In like manner, its com-
pound*

Apprendere, *to learn.*

Riprendere, *to reprove*

Comprendere, *to compre-
hend.*

Also, the Verbs

Rendere, *to render*

Ascendere, *to ascend*

Ridere, *to laugh.*

XXXIII. Rimanere, *to stay.*

1.

Rimango
rimani, ne
rimaniamo, nete, gono.

2.

Rimanevo, vi, va
rimanevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Rimasi
rimanesti
rimase
rimanemmo
rimaneste
rimaſero.

4.
Rimanerò, rai, rà
rimaneremo, rete, anno.

5.
Rimani
rimanga
rimaniamo, nete, ngano.

6.
Rimanga, a, a
rimaniamo, iate, ngano.

7.
Rimanerei, resti, rebbe
rimaneremmo, restè, reb-
bero.

8.
rimaneſſi, fi, ſe.
rimaneſſimo, este, eſſero.

9.
Rimanendo.

10.
Rimaſo, ſa
rimaſi, ſe.

XXXIV. Risolvere, *to resolve.*

1.

Risolvero, vi, ve
risolviamo

risolvete

rifolvete
risolvono.

2.
Rifolvevo, vi, va
risolvevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Rifolsti, risolvei, vetti
risolvevisti
risolvevi, risolve
risolvemmo
risolvevete
risolvero, risolvero.

4.
risolverò, rai, rà
risolveremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Risolvi, va
risolviamo
risolvete, vano.

6.
Risolva, a, a
Risolvia, viate, vano.

7.
Risolverei, resti, rebbe
risolveremmo, r. ste, reb-
bero.

8.
Risolvesti, sti, ste
risolvevamo, veste, vesse-
ro.

9.
Risolviendo.

10.
Risoluto, ta
risoluti, te.

In like manner,

Assolvere, *to discharge*.
dissolvere, *to loose*.

XXXV. Rispondere, *to answer.*

1.
Rispondo, di, de.
rispondiamo, dete, dono.

2.
Rispondeva, vi, va.
rispondevamo, ate, ano.

3.
Risposi
rispondesti
rispose
rispondemmo
rispondeste
risposero.

4.
Risponderò, rai, rà
risponderemo, rete, ran-
no.

5.
Rispondi, da
rispondiamo, dete, dano.

6.
Risponda, da, da
rispondiamo, diate, dano

7.
Risponderei, resti, rebbe
risponderemmo, reste,
rebbero.

8.

^{8.}
Rispondeffi, ffi, ffe
rispondeffimo, efte, ffero.

^{9.}
Rispondendo.

^{10.}
Rifpofto, a
rifpofti, te.

XXXVI. Rodere, to gnaw.

^{1.}
Rodo, di, de
Rodiamo, dete, dono.

^{2.}
Rodevo, vi, va
rodevamo, vate, vano.

^{3.}
Rofi
roffefi
rofe
rodemmo
rodeffe
roffero.

^{4.}
Roderò, rai, rà
roderemo, rete, ranno.

^{5.}
Rodi, da
rodiamo, dete, dano.

^{6.}
Roda, da, da
rodiamo, diate, dano.

^{7.}
Roderei, reffi, rebbe
roderemmo, reffe, reb-
bero.

^{8.}
Rodeffi, ffi, ffe
rodeffimo, efte, ffero.

^{9.}
Rodendo.

^{10.}
Rofo, fa
Rofi, fe.

XXXVII. Rompere, to break.

^{1.}
Rompo, pi, pe
rompiamo, pete, pono.

^{2.}
Rompevo, vi, va
rompevamo, ate, ano.

^{3.}
Ruppi
rompeffi
ruppe
rompemmo
rompeffe
ruppero.

^{4.}
Romperò, rai, rà
romperemo, rete, ran-
no.

^{5.}
Rompi, pa

rom-

rompiamo, pete, pano

6.

Rompa, a, a

rompiamo, plate, pano.

7.

Romperei, resti, rebbe

romperemmo, reste,

rebbero.

8.

Rompeffi, ffi, sse

rompeffimo, este, essero.

9.

Rompendo.

10.

Rotto, ta

Rotti, te.

In like manner, its Compound

Corrompere, to corrupt.

XXXVIII. Rispondere, to answer.

1.

Rispondo, di, de

rispondiamo, dete, dono.

2.

Rispondevo, vi, va

rispondevamo, ate, ano.

3.

Rispossi

rispondesti

rispose

rispondemmo

rispondeste

risposero.

4.

Risponderò, rai, rà

risponderemo, rete, ran-

no.

5.

Rispondi, da

rispondiamo, dete, dano.

6.

Risponda, da, da

rispondiamo, diate, da-

no.

7.

Risponderei, resti, reb-

be

risponderemmo, reste,

rebbero.

8.

Rispondeffi, ffi, sse

rispondeffimo, este, essero.

9.

Rispondendo.

10.

Risposto, ta

Risposti, te.

XXXIX. Rodere, to gnaw.

1.

Rodo, di, de

rodiamo, dete, dono.

X

2.

2.
Rodevo, vi, va
rodevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Rosi
rodesti
rose
rodemmo
rodeste
rosero.

4.
Roderò, rai, rà
roderamo, rete, ranno.

5.
Rodi, da
rodiamo, dete, dano.

6.
Roda, da, da
rodiamo, dete, dano.

7.
Roderei, resti, rebbe
roderemmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.
Rodeſſi, ſſi, ſſe
rodeſſimo, eſte, ſſero.

9.
Rodendo.

10.
Roſo, fa
Roſi, ſe.

XL. Sapere, *to know.*

1.
Sò, fai, fà
ſapiamo, pete, pono.

2.
Sapevo, vi, va
ſapevamo, vate, vano

3.
Seppi
ſapeſti
ſeppe
ſapemmo
ſapeſte
ſeppero.

4.
Saperò, rai, rà
ſaperemo, rete, ranno.

5.
Sappi
ſappia
ſappiamo
ſappete
ſappiano.

6.
Sappia, a, a
ſappiamo
ſappiate
ſappiano.

7.
Saperei, reſti, rebbe
ſapperemmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.
Sapeffi, ffi, ffe
fapeffimo, efte, effero.

9.
Sapendo.

10.
Saputo, ta,
faputi, te.

7

XLI. Scrivere, to
write.

1.
Scrivo, vi, ve
fcriviamo, vete, vono.

2.
Scrivevo, vi, va
fcrivevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Scriffi
fcriveffi
fcriffe
fcrivemmo
fcrivefte
fcriffero.

4.
Scriverò, rai, rà
fcriveremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Scrivi, va
fcriviamo, vete, vano.

6.
Scriva, va, va
fcriviamo, viate, vano.

7.
Scriverei, reffi, rebbe
fcriveremmo, reffe, reb-
bero.

8.
Scriveffi, effi, effe
fcriveffimo, efte, effero.

9.
Scrivendo.

10.
Scritto, ta
Scritti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*
Sottoscrivere, *to subscribe.*
Trascrivere, *to write over.*

XLII. Solère, to be
wont.

1.
Soglio, fuoli, sole
fogliamo
folete
folono, fogliono.

2.
Solevo, vi, va
folevamo, vate, vano.

3. 4.
wanting.

5.
Suoli, foglia
fogliamo, iate, iano.

X 2

6.

6.
Sogna, a, a
fogliamo, iate, iano.
7.
wanting.
8.
Soleffi, effi, effe
soleffimo, este, effero.
9.
Solendo.
10.
*Solito, ta
soliti, te.

XLIII. Sedere, *to sit*.

1.
Sedo, di, de
fediamo, dete, dono.
2.
Sedevo, vi, va
fedevamo, vate, vano.
3.
Sedei, fedetti
fedesti
fedette
fedemmo, deste, dettero.
4.
Sederò, rai, rà
federemo, rete, ranno.
5.
Sedi, da
fediamo, dete, dano.

6.
Seda, da, da
fediamo, iate, dano.
7.
Sederei, resti, rebbe
federemmo, reste, reb-
bero.
8.
Sedeffi, effi, effe
fedeffimo, este, effero.
9.
Sedendo.
10.
Seduto, ta
feduti, te.

XLIV. Solvere, *to loose*.

1.
Solvo, vi, ve
Solviamo, vete, vono.
2.
Solvevo, vi, va
Solvevamo, vate, vano.
3.
Solvei, solvetti
solvesti
solve, solvette.
Solvemmo, veste, vette-
ro.
4.
Solverò, rai, rà
solveremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Solvi, va
solviamo, vete, vano.

6.
Solva, a, a
solviamo, viate, vano.

7.
Solverei, resti, rebbe
solveremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Solveffi, effi, esse
solveremmo, este, essero.

9.
Solvendo.

10.
Soluti, ta
soluti, te.

XLV. Scegliere, to
chuse.

1.
Scelgo, scoglio
scelgi, scegli
scelge, sceglie
scegliamo
scegliete
scelgono.

2.
Sceglievo, vi, va
sceglievamo, vate, vano.

3.
Scelsi
sceglieffi
scelse
scegliemmo
sceglieffe
scelsero.

4.
Scegliero, rai, rà
scegliremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Scegli, scelga
scegliamo, iete, ano.

6.
Scelga, a, a
scegliamo, iate, ano.

7.
Sceglierei, resti, rebbe
sceglieremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Sceglieffi, effi, esse
sceglieffimo, este, essero.

9.
Scegliendo.

10.
Scelto, scegliuto, ta
Scelti, scegliuti, te

XLVI. Tenere, to
kecp.

1.
Tengo, tieni, tiene
X 3 teniamo,

teniamo, tenete, tengono.

2.

Tenevo, vi, va
tenevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Tenni, teneſti, tenne
tenemmo, teneſte, tenero.

4.

Terrò, rai, rà
terremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Tieni, tenga
teniamo, tenete, tengano.

6.

Tenga, ga, ga
teniamo, iate, ngano.

7.

Terrei, reſti, rebbe
terremmo, reſte, rebbbero.

8.

teneſſi, eſſi, eſſe
teneſſimo, eſte, eſſero.

9.

Tenendo.

10.

Tenuto, ta
tenuti, te.

In like manner, its compounds

Trattenére, to entertain

Ritenére, to retain
Softenére, to maintain.

XLVII. Trahere, trarre, to draw.

I

Traho, traggo
trahi, traghi,
trahé, traghe
trahiamo, traghiamo
trahete, traghete
trahono, trahgono.

2.

Trahevo, vi, va
trahévamo, vate, vano:

3.

Traſſi, traheſti, traſſe
trahemmo, heſte, traſſero.

4.

Traherò, rai, rà
traheremmo, rete, ranno:

5.

Trahi, traha, tragga
trahiamo, trahete, traggano.

6.

Tragga, ga, ga
trahiamo, hiate, tragganono.

7.

7.
Trarrei, resti, rebbe
trarremmo, restete, reb-
bero.

8.
Traheffi, effi, esse
traheffimo, este, essero.

9.
Trahendo.

10.
tratto, ta
tratti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound.*

Attrarre, *to attract*
Distrarre, *to withdraw*
Ritrarre, *to retire,*
Sottrarre, *to subtract.*

XLVIII. Valére, *to* *be worth.*

1.
Vaglio, vali, vale
vogliamo, valete, vagli-
ono.

2.
Valevo, vi, va
valevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Valfi, volesti, valse
valemmo, volestete, valse-
ro.

4.
Valerò, rai, rà
valeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Vali, vaglia
vogliamo, vale, vag-
liano.

6.
Vaglia, a, a
vogliamo, iate, iano.

7.
Valerei, resti, rebbe
valeremmo, restete reb-
bero.

8.
Valeffi, effi, esse
valeffimo, este, essero.

9.
Valendo.

10.
Valuto, ta
valuti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Prevalére, *to prevail*
Rivalére, *to recover health.*

XLIX. Vedére, to
see.

1.
Vedo, di, de
vediamo, dete, dono.

2.
Vedevo, vi, va
vedevamo, vate, vano.

3.
Viddi, vedesti, vidde
vedemmo, vedeste, vid-
dero.

4.
Vederò, vedrò, rai, rà
vederemo, rete, ranno.

5.
Vedi, veda
vediamo, vedete, veda-
no.

6.
Veda, a, a
vediamo, diate, dano.

7.
Vederei, resti, rebbe
vederemmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.
Vedeſſi, eſſi, eſſe
vedeſſimo, eſte, eſſe-
ro.

9.
Vedendo.

10.

Viſto, veduto, ta
viſti, veduti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Avedére, *to perceive*
Provedére, *to provide*
Rivedére, *to review*
Sprovedére, *to unprovide.*

L. Vivere, to live.

1.

Vivo, vi, ve
viviamo, vete, vono.

2.

Vivevo, vi, va
vivevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Viſſi, viveſti, viſſe
vivemmo, veſte, viſſero.

4.

Viverò, rai, rà
viveremmo, rete, ranno.

5.

Vivi, viva
viviamo, vivete, vivano.

6.

Viva, a, a
viviamo, viate, vivano.

7.

Viverei, reſti, rebbe
viveremmo,

viveremmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.

Viveſſi, eſſi, eſſe
viveſſimo, eſte, eſſero.

9.

Vivendo.

10.

Viſſuto, ta
viſſuti, te.

LI. Vincere, to con- quer.

Vinco, ci, ce
Vinciamo, cete, cono.

2.

Vincevo, vi, va
vincevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Vinſi, ceſti, vinſe
vincemmo, ceſte, ſero.

4.

Vincerò, rai, rà
vinceremo, rete, ranno,

5.

Vinci, ca
vinciamo, cete, cano.

6.

Vinca, a, a
vinciamo, ciate, cano.

7.

Vincerei, reſti, rebbe

vinceremmo, reſte, reb-
bero.

8.

Vinceſſi, eſſi, eſſe
vinceſſimo, eſte, eſſe-
ro.

9.

Vincendo.

10.

Vinto, ta
Vinti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound.*

Convincere, to overcome.

LII. Volére, to be willin^g.

1.

Voglio, vuoi, vuole
vogliamo, volete, vog-
liono.

2.

Volevo, vi, va
volevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Volli, voleſti, volle
volemmo, voleſte, vol-
lero.

4.

Vorrò, rai, rà
voremmo, rete, ranno.

5.

5.
wanting.
6.
Voglia, a, a
vogliamo, iate, iano.
7.
Vorrei, resti, rebbe
vorremmo, reste, reb-
bero.
8.
Voleffi, effi, effe
voleffimo, este, effero.
9.
Volendo.
10.
Voluto, ta
voluti, te.

LIII. Volgere, *to*
turn.

1.
Volgo, gi, ge
volgiamo, gete, gono.
2.
Volgevo, vi, va
volgevemo, vate, vano.
3.
Volfi, volgesti, volse

volgemmo, volgeste,
volsero.

4.
Volgerò, rai, rà
volgeremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Volgi, ga,
volgiamo, gete, gano.

6.
Volga, a, a
volgiamo, giate, gano.

7.
Volgerei, resti, rebbe
volgeremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Volgesti, effi, effe
volgestimo, este, effe-
ro.

9.
Volgendo.

10.
Volto, ta
volti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound*

Revolgere, *to return.*

Irregular

Irregular V E R B S,
Of the FOURTH CONJUGATION, in *Ire.*

I. Abolire, *to abolish.*

1.	Abbolisco, isci, isce	abboliffimo, iste, issero.
	abboliamo, ite, iscono.	9. Abbolendo.
2.	Abbolivo, vi, va	10. Abbolito, ta
	abbolivamo, vate, vano.	aboli ti, te.

3.
Abbolii, listi, boli
abbolimmo, liste, lirono.

In like manner are declined.

Abborrire, *to abhor*
Bollire, *to boil.* &c.

4.
Abbolirò, rai, rà
abboliremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Abbolisci, ca
abboliamo, lite, liscano.

6.
Abbolisca, ca, ca
abboliamo, iate, iscano

7.
Abbolirei, resti, rebbe
abboliremmo, reste, rebbbero.

8.
Abbolissi, issi, isse

II. Aprire, *to open.*

1.
Apro, apri, apre
apriamo, aprite, aprono.

2.
Aprivo, vi, va
aprivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Aprii, aperfi
apristi.

Aprì, aperse
aprimmo, apriste
apiriono,

aprirono, aperfero.

4.
Apriro. rai, rà
apriremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Apri, apra
apriamo, aprite, aprano.

6.
Apra, a, a
apriamo, ate, iano.

7.
Aprirei, resti, rebbe
apriremmo, reste, rebbe-
ro.

8.
Aprissi, issi, isse
apriissimo, iste, issero.

9.
Aprendo.

10.
Aperto, ta
Aperti, te:

III. Apparire, *to* *appear.*

1.
Apparisco, isci, isce
appariamo, rite, iscono:

2.
Apparivo, vi, va
apparivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Apparii, apperfi
apparissi
appari, aparfe
apparimmo
appariste
apparino, apparfero.

4.
Apparirò, rai, rà
apparemo, rete, ranno:

5.
Apparisci, sca
appariamo, rite, risca-
no.

6.
Apparisca, ca, ca
appariamo, riate, risca-
no.

7.
Apparirei, resti, rebbe
appareissimo, iste, issero.

8.
Apparissi, issi, isse
apparissimo, iste, issero.

9.
Apparendo.

10.
Apparso, a
apparso, e.

IV. Bianchire, *to*
whiten.

¹
Bianchisco, isci, isce
bianchisciamo, chite,
chiscono.

²
Bianchivo, vi, va
bianchevamo, vate, va-
no.

³
Bianchii, chisti, chi
bianchimmo, chiste, chi-
rono.

⁴
Bianchirò, rai, rà
biancheremo, rete, ran-
no.

⁵
Bianchisci, ca
bianchisciamo, chite,
chiscano.

⁶
Bianchisca, ca, ca
bianchisciamo, ciate, chi-
ciano.

⁷
Bianchirei, resti, rebbe
biancheremmo, reste,
rebbero.

⁸
Bianchissi, issi, isse

bianchissimo, isse, isse-
ro.

⁹
Bianchendo.

¹⁰
Bianchito, ta
bianchite, ti.

V. Capire, *to take.*

¹
Capisco, ci, ce
capiamo, pite, capif-
cono.

²
Capivo, vi, va
capivamo, vate, vano.

³
Capii, pisti, pi
capimmo, pifte, piro-
no.

⁴
Capiro, rai, rà
capiremo, rete, ranno.

⁵
Capisci, ca
capimo, pite, piscano.

⁶
Capisca, ca, ca
capiamo, piate, piscano.

⁷
Capirei, resti, rebbe
Y capi-

capiremmo, reſte, rebb-
bero.

8.

Capiffi, iſſi, iſſe
capiffimo, iſte, iſſero.

9.

Capendo.

10.

Capito, ta
Capiti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pound*

Concepire, *to conceive.*

Alſo,

Patire, *to ſuffer*

Compire, *to accompliſh,*
&c.

VI. Dire, *to ſay.*

1.

Dico, dici, dice
diciamo, dite, dicono.

2.

Dicevo, vi, va
dicevamo, vate, vano.

3.

Diſſi, diceſti, diſſe
dicemmo, diceſte, diſſe-
ro.

4.

Dirò rai, rà
diremo, rote, ranno.

5.

Di, dica
diciamo, dite, dicano.

6.

Dici, ca, ca
diciamo, diciate, dicano.

7.

direi, reſti, rebbe
diremmo, reſte, rebbe-
ro.

8.

Diceſſi, eſſi, eſſe
diceſſimo, eſte, eſſero.

5.

Dicendo.

10.

Detto, ta
detti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Contradire, *to contradict*

Ridire, *to repeat*

Maledire, *to curſe, &c.*

VII. Eſſeguire, *to execute.*

1.

Eſſeguiſco, ci, ce
eſſeguiamo, guite, guif-
cano.

2.

Eſſeguivo, vi, va
eſſeguvia-

effeguivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Effeguii, guisti, gui
effeguimmo, guiste, gui-
rono.

4.

Effeguirò, rai, rà
effeguiremo, rete, ran-
no.

5.

Effeguisca, ca
effeguiamo, guite, guif-
cano.

6.

Effeguisca, ca, ca
effeguiamo, guiate, guif-
cand.

7.

Effeguirei, reste, rebbe
effeguiremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Effeguiisti, istì, esse
effeguiissimo, iste, isse-
ro.

9.

Effeguendo.

10.

Effeguito, ta
effeguiti, te.

VIII. Gire, or Gir, to go.

*Note, there be only the
following Tenses and
Persons of this Verb in
use.*

1.

Gite, you go.

2.

Givo, vi, va, or già
givamo, vate, vano.

3.

Gii, gisti, gi, or già
gimmo, giste, girono.

4.

Girò, rai, rà
giremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Gite, go you.

8.

Gissi, gissi, gisse
gissimo, giste, gissiro.

10.

Gito.

IX. Morire, to dye.

1.

Moro, mucio
mori

Y 2

more

more,
moriamo, muoiamo
morite
morono, muiono.

2.

Morivo, vi, va
morivamo, ate, ano.

3.

Morii, ri*ri*, mori
morimmo, riste, iro-
no.

4.

Morirò, rai, rà
moriremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Mori, mora
moriamo, rite, rano.

6.

Mora, ra, ra
moriamo, riate, rano.

7.

Morirei, resti, rebbe
moriremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Morissi, i*ssi*, i*sse*
morissimo, iste, i*ssero*.

9.

Morendo.

10.

Morto, ta
morti, te.

X. Offerire, *to offer.*

1.

Offerisco, ci, ce
offeriamo, rite, riscono.

2.

Offerivo, vi, va
offerivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Offerii, offeri*ssi*,
offeristi
offeri, offerse
offerimmo
offeriste
offerirono, offerifero.

4.

Offerirò, rai, rà
offeremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Offerisci, sca
offeriamo, riate, iscano.

6.

Offerisca, ca, ca
offeriamo, riate, iscano.

7.

Offerirei, resti, rebbe
offeriremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Offerissi, i*ssi*, i*sse*.
offerissimo, iste, i*ssero*.

9.

Offerendo.

10.
Offerto, ta
offerti, te.

In like manner,
Ferire, *to strike*
and its compounds
proferire, *to proffer*
Preferire, *to prefer*
Soffrire, *to suffer*.

XI. Salire, *to leap*.

1.
Salgo, faglio
fali, le
fogliamo
falite
falgono, foggiono.

2.
Salivo, vi, va
salivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Salii, falsi
falisti
fali, false
falimmo
faliste
falirono, falsere.

4.
Salirò, rai, rà
faliremo, rete, ranno.

5.
Sali

salga, faglia
fogliamo
falite
falgano.

6.
Salga, faglia
falga, ga
fogliamo, liate, gano.

7.
Salirei, resti, rebbe
faliremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.
Salissi, issi, isse
falissimo, iste, issero.

9.
Salendo.

10.
Salito, ta
faliti, te.

XII. Spedire, *to dispatch*.

1.
Spedisco, sci, sce
spediamo, dite, sono.

2.
Spedivo, vi, vi
spedivamo, vate, vano.

3.
Spedii, disti, di
spedimmo, diste, diro-
no.

^{4.}
Spedirò, rai, rà
spediremo, rete, ranno.

^{5.}
Spedisci, sca
spediamo, dite, dano.

^{6.}
Spedisca, sca, sca
spediamo, diate, dano.

^{7.}
Spedirei, resti, rebbe
spediremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

^{8.}
Spedissi, issi, isse
spedissimo, iste, issero.

^{9.}
Spedendo.

^{10.}
Spedito, ta
spediti, te.

XIII. Udire, *to* *hear.*

^{1.}
Odo, odi, ode
udiamo, udite, odono.

^{2.}
Udivo, vi, va
udivamo, vate, vano.

^{3.}
Udii, udisti, udi
udimmo, udiste, udi-
rono.

^{4.}
Udirò, rai, rà
udiremo, rete, ranno.

^{5.}
Odi, oda
udiamo, udite, odano:

^{6.}
Oda, oda, oda
udiamo, diate, odano.

^{7.}
Udirei, resti, rebbe
udiremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

^{8.}
Udisti, issi, isse
udissimo, iste, issero.

^{9.}
Udendo.

^{10.}
Udito, ta
uditi, te

XIV.. Venire, *to* *come.*

^{1.}
Vengo
vieni, vienne
veniamo,

veniamo, vehite, ven-
gono.

2.

Venivo, vi, va
venivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Venni, venisti, venne.
venimmo, niste, nero.

4.

Verrò, rai, rà
verremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Vieni, venga
veniamo, nite, vengano.

6.

Venga, ga, ga
veniamo, iate, gano.

7.

Verrei, resti, rebbe
verremmo, reste, reb-
bero.

8.

Venissi, issi, isse
venissimo, iste, issero.

9.

Venendo.

10.

Venuto, ta
Venuti, te.

*In like manner, its com-
pounds*

Rivenire, *to return.*

Convenire, *to meet.*

XVI. Uscire, *to go out.*

1.

Esco, esci, esce
usciamo, uscite, escono.

2.

Uscivo, vi, va
uscivamo, vate, vano.

3.

Uscii, uscisti, uscì
uscimmo, usciste, uscì-
rono.

4.

Uscirò, rai, rà
usciremo, rete, ranno.

5.

Esci, esca
usciamo, uscite, escano.

6.

Esca, ca, ca
usciamo, iate, escano.

7.

Uscirei, resti, rebbe
uscirem-

Learner to make Compositions, and to read the best Authors, by which he will reap great Profit and Improvement in his Studies, both which I wish him sincerely.

Aminta, Tirsi.

A MINTA, *Hò visto*
al pianto mio
Risponder per pietate i sa-
ssi, e l' onde.
E sospirar le fronde
Hò visto al pianto mio:
Mà non hò visto mai,
Ne spero di vedere
Compassion ne la crudele, e
bella,
Che non sò s'io la chiami ò
Donna, ò fera ;
Mà nega d'esser Donna,
Poiche nega pietate
A chi non la negara
Le cose inanimate.

Tirsi, Pasce l' Agna l' her-
bette, il Lupo l' Agne ;
Mà il crudo Amor di la-
grime si pasce,
Ne se ne mostra mai satollo.

Am. Abi lasso!
Ch' Amor satollo è del mio
pianto homai,
E solo hà sete del mie sangue,
e tosto

Aminta. Thyrsis.

A MINTA. I have
 seen the Rocks and
 Waters compassionately
 reply to my Complaints,
 I have seen the Woods
 accompany my Com-
 plaints with sighs : but I
 have never seen nor hope
 to see Compassion in the
 cruel Fair, whom I
 know not whether to
 call Woman or Brute ;
 but she denies herself to
 be a Woman, because
 she denies Compassion,
 where inanimate things
 have not denied it.

Thyr. The Lamb feeds
 on the Grass, the Wolf
 on the Lambs ; but cruel
 Love feeds on Tears,
 and never shews himself
 satisfied.

Am. Alas ! Love is
 long since satisfied with
 my Tears, and now only
 thirsts after my Blood ;
 and soon am I resolved,
 that

*Voglio, ch'egli, e quest'
empia il sangue mio
Bevan' con gl'occhi.*

*Tirsi, Abi Aminta! ah
Aminta,*

*Che parli? ò che vaneggi?
hor ti conforta,*

*Ch' un' altra troverai, se
ti disprezza*

Questa crudele.

*Am. Ohime! come poss'io
Altri trovar, se me trovar
non posso?*

*Se perduto hò me stesso,
quale acquisto*

Faro mai, che mi piaccia?

*Tir. O miserello,
Non disperar, ch'acquisti-
rai costei.*

*La lunga etate insegna
al'huom di porre*

*Freno à i leoni, ed à le
tigri Hircane.*

*Am. Mà il misero non
puoté à la sua morte
Indugio sostener di lungo
tempo.*

*Tir. Sarà corto l'indugio :
In breve spatium s'adira,
e in breve spatium anco si
placa*

*Femina, cosa mobil per
natura,*

that he, and that cruel
Creature, shall drink my
Blood with their Eyes.

*Thyr. Ah Aminta!
Aminta, what are you
talking? or why do you
rave thus? comfort your-
self now, for you will
find another, if this
cruel one disdains you.*

*Am. Alas! how can
I find another, if I can-
not find my self? if I
have lost my self, what
Acquisition shall I ever
make that can please me?*

*Thyr. Poor Man, ne-
ver despair of gaining
her. Length of Time
has taught Men to rein
the Lions, and the
Tygers of Arcania.*

*Am But an unhappy
Wretch can't a long
time sustain the Delay of
his Death.*

*Thyr. The Delay will
be short: Woman is soon
angry, and soon appeas'd,
a Creature moveable by
Nature, more than the
slender*

*Più che fraschetta al ven-
to, e più che cima
Di pieghevole spica; mà, ti
prego*

*Fa, ch'io sappia più a
dentro de la tua*

*Dura conditione, e de l'
amore :*

*Che se ben confessato m'hai
più volte*

*D'amare, mi tacesti però
dove*

*Fosse posto l'amore, ed è
ben degna*

*La fedele amicitia, ed il
commune*

*Studio de le Muse, ch'a me
scuopra*

Cio ch' à gli altri si cela.

Am. Io son contento

*Tirsi, à te dir ciò, che le
selve, e i monti,*

*E i fiumi fanno, e gli
huomini non fanno :*

*Ch'io sono homai sì prossimo
à la morte,*

*Ch'è ben ragion, ch'io
lasci, chi radica*

*La cagion del morire, e
che l' incida*

*Ne la scorza d'un faggio,
presso il luogo,*

*Dove sarà sepolto il corpo
esanguè :*

slender Twig, or the
pliant Ear of Corn before
the Wind: but prithee, let
me know something far-
ther of thy hard Condi-
tion, and thy Love : For
though you have often
confest to me that you
was in Love, yet you
never told me where you
plac'd your Love.: and
our faithful Friendship,
and our common study
of the Muses, deserves,
that what is conceal'd
from others, should be
discover'd to me.

*Am. I am content,
Thyrsis, to tell you that,
which the Woods, the
Mountains, and the Ri-
vers know, though 'tis
unknown to Men: for I
am now so near to Death,
that there is good Reason
that I shou'd leave one
behind who may relate
the Cause of my Death,
and engrave it on the
Bark of a Beech-tree,
near the place where my
dead Body shall be buried.*

*Si che tal hor. passandovi
 quell' empia,
 Si goda di calcar l' ossa in-
 felici
 Co'l piè superbo, e trà se
 dica, E questo
 Pur mio trionfo ; e goda
 di vedere.
 Che nota sia la sua vittoria
 à tutti
 Li pastori paesani, e pelle-
 grini,
 Che quivi il caso guidi, e
 forse (ahi, spero
 Troppo alte cose) un giorno
 esser potrebbe,
 Ch' ella, commossa da tarda
 pietate,
 Piangesse morto, chi già
 vivo uccise ;
 Dicendo, O pur qui fosse,
 e fosse mio ! Hor odi.
 Tirsi, Segui pur, ch'io
 bent' ascolto,
 E forse à miglior fin, che
 tu non pensi.
 Am. Essendo io fanciullet-
 to, sì che à pena
 Giunger potea con la man
 pargoletta
 A corre i frutti da i piega-
 ti rami
 De già arboscelli, intrinfeco
 divenni*

that the cruel Maid when
 she passes by, may take
 delight to trample my
 unhappÿ Bones with her
 proud Foot, and say
 within herself, here lies
 my Triumph ; and may
 rejoice to see, that her
 Victory is known to all
 Country Shepherds, and
 the Strangers, whom
 chance directs this way :
 and perhaps (alas my
 Hopes are too high) a
 Day may come, when
 she, being mov'd with
 too late a Pity, may la-
 ment him dead, whom
 living she kill'd ; and say ;
 oh ! were he here, and
 where he mine ! Attend
 now.

Thyr. Go on then, for
 I am attentive, and per-
 haps to better Purpose,
 than you imagine.

Am. While I was yet
 so young, that I could
 scarce reach with my
 little Hand to gather
 fruit from the bending
 Boughs of the young
 Trees, I became ac-
 quainted

*De la più vaga, e cara
Verginella,
Che mai spiegasse al vento
chioma d'oro :*

*La figliuola conosci di Ci-
dippe,*

*E di Montan ricchissimo
d'armenti?*

*Silvia, honor de le selve,
ardor de l'alme,*

*Di questa parlo, abi lassol
vissi à questa*

*Così unito alcun tempo,
che frà due*

*Tortorelle più fida compag-
nia*

Non sarà mai, nè fue.

Congiunti eran gli alberghi,

Mà più congiunti i cori :

Conforme era l'etate,

Mà'l pensier più conforme:

*Secò tendeva insidie con le
reti*

*A i pesci, ed à gli augelli,
e seguitava*

*I cervi feco, e le veloci
dame ;*

*E'l diletto, e la preda era
commune,*

*Mà, mentre io fea rapina
d'animali,*

*Fui, non sò come, à me
stesso rapito.*

quainted with the most
beautiful and dearest
Maid, that e'er display'd
her golden Hair to the
Wind : know you the
Daughter of *Cidippa*, and
and of *Montanus*, so
wealthy in Cattle? *Sylvia*,
the Honour of the
Woods, the Passion of
Souls ; of her I speak,
Alas ! I liv'd with her
so united for some
time, that between two
Turtles there never will
be, nor ever was a more
faithful Alliance. Ad-
joining were our Habita-
tions, but more adjoining
our Hearts : alike
were our Ages, but our
Thoughts more alike :
With her I us'd to spread
the ensnaring Net for
Fishes, and for Birds,
and follow'd with her
the Stags and swift Does ;
both our Diversion and
our Prey was common.
But whilst I was making
a Prey of Animals, I be-
came, I know not how,
a Prey my self. By little
and

*A poco à poco nacque nel
mio petto,*

Non sò da qual radice,

*Com'herba fuol, che per se
stessa germi,*

Un'incognito affetto,

Che mi fea desiare

D'esser sempre presente

A la mia bella Silvia,

E bevea da' suoi lumi

Un' estranea dolcezza,

Che lasciava nel fine

Un non sò che d'amaro:

*Sospirava sovente, e non
sapeva*

La cagion de' sospiri.

Così fui prima Amante,

ch' intendessi

Che cosa fosse Amore.

Ben me n'accorsi al fin.

and little there grew with-
in my Breast, I know
not from what Root,
like an Herb that shoots
out of it self, a Passion
I was unacquainted with
before, which made me
desire to be always in
the Presence of my fair
Sylvia, and I drank from
her Eyes a strange Sweet-
ness, which left behind it
in the end I know not
what kind of Bitter: I
sigh'd often, and knew
not the cause of my sigh-
ing. Thus I became a
Lover, before I under-
stood what kind of thing
Love was. Too well I
found what it was at last !

An INDEX to the RULES.

- A** or *an* before a Noun, c. 5. r. 11.
A or *an* before parts of *time*, *measures*, &c. c. 1. r. 6.
As, *as*, c. 5. r. 9.
As far as, c. 5. r. 46.
At, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 19.
At, *at the* before *house*, *at home*, c. 5. r. 8.
At night, *at noon*, c. 1. r. 23.
Ag, c. 5. r. 17.
Am, and its Tenses before *hot*, *cold*, *hungry*, &c. c. 4. r. 8.
Am, and its Tenses before an Infinitive, c. 5. r. 48.
All over, c. 5. r. 63.
All, or *every*, c. 5. r. 41.
A great deal of, c. 5. r. 34.
A little of, *ibid*.
After that, c. 5. r. 48.
Any, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
Any, with a Verb, c. 3. r. 16.
About, before the word *clock*, c. 5. r. 20, 21.
About, *round about*, c. 5. r. 22.
About, for *near*, c. 5. r. 23.
About, after *am*, c. 5. r. 24.
About, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 5. r. 25.
About, *concerning*, c. 5. r. 26.
About, for *upon*, *towards*, & other significations. c. 5. r. 26, 27.
Article before a Noun, c. 1. r. 1, 2.
Article not expressed after *is*, page 74.
Articles, Table of p. 52.
Article before Pronouns, possessive, c. 1. r. 8.
Abverbs of Quantity, c. 1. r. 15.
Adjectives of good and bad qualities. c. 1. r. 16.
— of colours, nations &c. c. 1. r. 17. note 1.
Because, after a Negative, c. 3. r. 17.
But, with a Verb, c. 5. r. 7.
Better, c. 5. r. 15.
Before, with Verbs, c. 5. r. 18.
Being, before a Participle common, c. 5. r. 49.
To bring, c. 5. r. 50.
Clock, c. 5. r. 32.
Ci, *you*, c. 3. r. 14. &c.
Can, c. 4. r. 11.

Definite

An INDEX to the RULES. 259

- Definite Tense**, c. 4. r. 14.
To doubt, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
Do, does, c. 5. r. 51.
To enjoy, c. 1. r. 13.
Ecco, takes an Article, c. 5. r. 37.
Every, or *all*, c. 5. r. 41.
From, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
From, *from the*, before Pronouns and proper Names, c. 1. r. 18.
To fear, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
From, before *house*, *from home*, c. 5. r. 8.
From, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 5. r. 52.
From whom, *from which*, *ibid.*
To go, c. 4. r. 9.—c. 5. r. 38.
Good, c. 5. r. 30.
Gerunds takes an Article, c. 5. r. 37.
Gli takes *e* after it, p. 78.
He who, she who, c. 3. r. 12.
He, &c. relative, *ibid.*
Him, her, it, them, not expressed after *si they*, c. 3. r. 13.
To have, with, a Participle common after *they*, c. 3. r. 13.
He that, c. 3. r. 17.
He is a, she is a, c. 4. r. 5.
To binder, takes *non*, c. 5. r. 5.
Here, c. 5. r. 36.
Having, not expressed, c. 5. r. 53.
How, note of admiration, c. 5. r. 60.
How long, e. 5. r. 16.
How old, c. 5. r. 56.
House, c. 5. r. 8.
It, and *Pronouns* in a question, c. 3. r. 4.
It is, before *weather*, c. 4. r. 7.
It is, it was, it has been, c. 4. r. 4.
If, the Tense it governs, c. 5. r. 29.
In, before a Participle in *ing*, c. 4. r. 20.
In, before Nouns of number and Numerals, c. 4. r. 21.
In, into, after Verbs of motion and rest, c. 5. r. 28.
 —after the Future Tense, *ibid.*
Into, before Kingdoms, &c. c. 1. r. 21.
In the, before parts of time, c. 1. r. 7.
In the, in comparison, c. 1. r. 12.
In the, into the, e. 1. r. 20.
In my, in thy, in his &c. c. 5. r. 40.
To be ill, c. 5. r. 47.
Just now, c. 5. r. 14.
Indefinite Tense, turned by *have*, or *am*, c. 4. r. 15.

Infinitives

260 *An INDEX to the RULES.*

- Infinitives** take *to*, *la*, *li*,
&c. after them, c. 5. r.
 37. c. 3. r. 2.
Infinitive Mood used in
 forbidding, c. 5. r. 39.
To know, c. 4. r. 28.
Long, c. 5. r. 16.
Like, c. 5. r. 45.
Long of, c. 5. r. 46.
To live, c. 5. r. 61.
Little of, c. 5. r. 34.
Me some, þe some, him some,
&c. or of it, p. 29. 79.
My, thy, his, her, &c. before
 a part of the body and
 word *mind*, c. 4. r. 2.
May, or *can*, c. 4. r. 11.
Might, c. 4. r. 13.
More, more of, c. 5. r. 48.
More than, *ibid.*
Much, in comparison, c. 5.
 r. 44.
Must, c. 5. r. 64.
In that manner, c. 5. r. 43.
In my, in thy, in his, in her,
 c. 5. r. 40.
Names of rivers, mountains,
 and kingdoms take an
 article, c. 1. r. 3.
Names of dignity and office,
 take no article, c. 1. r. 4, 5.
Nonns of number, c. 1.
 r. 24.
Negative *not*, at the begin-
 ing, c. 3. r. 1. 2. 4.
Noun repeated, c. 3. r. 14.
Ne, a Pronoun, c. 3. r. 14.
&c.
Negatives, *not*, *nothing*,
never, *no-body*, c. 5. r. 1.
Not, no, alone, c. 5. r. 2.
Never, beginning the sen-
 tence, c. 5. r. 3.
Negatives not expressed
 double, c. 5. r. 4.
Now, in comparison before
 the verb, c. 5. r. 6.
Noun in a question, c. 4.
 r. 23.
Near, vide *about*.
At night, noon, c. 1. r. 23.
Noun Substantives take an
 article, c. 1. r. 2.
Nouns in general, take an
 article, c. 1. r. 1.
Of, before Substantives, c.
 1. r. 10.
Of, of the, before Pronouns
 and Prepositions, c. 1.
 r. 18.
Of whom, whose, c. 3. r. 15.
Of whom, to whom, c. 3.
 r. 16.
Ought, c. 4. r. 10.
Old, c. 5. r. 56.
Prepositions, c. 5. r. 18.
Preposition *a* or *ad* before
andare, and Verbs of mo-
 tion, c. 5. r. 38.
Participle common put last,
 c. 3. r. 5.

Participle

An INDEX to the RULES. 261

- Participle common after 3. *who, he, him, &c.* c. r. 6.
 — ending in *ing*, turned into the Infinitive Mood, c. 4. r. 19. c. 1. r. 9.
 — in *ing*, before *in*, c. 4. r. 20.
People, c. 5. r. 13.
 Pronouns Personal, *vide* Table of Pronouns.
 Pronouns Possessive, and absolute, c. 2. r. 1.
 — Personal before the verb, c. 3. r. 1.
 — after the Verb, c. 3. r. 2.
 — in a question, c. 3. r. 3, 4.
 Pronouns after *if they*, c. 3. r. 13. and page 79.
 — *mi, ti, &c.* with *they*, c. 3. r. 13.
 Pronouns Conjunctive, p. 28 74.
 — Conjunctive changed p. 29 74.
 Proper Names take no article, c. 1. r. 5.
Presently, c. 5. r. 14.
 Reciprocal Verbs, c. 1. r. 13. c. 4. r. 1.
 — used for Verbs Passive, c. 4. r. 3.
 3. *if*, what Mood and Tense it governs, c. 5. r. 29.
Some, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 10.
Should, c. 4. r. 12.
So, c. 5. r. 10.
Since, c. 5. r. 19.
Some, with a Verb, c. 3. r. 14.
So that, c. 5. r. 43.
Something, c. 5. r. 62.
She is a, c. 4. r. 5.
She who, c. 3. r. 12.
To stand, c. 4. r. 9.
Si they, after a Verb accented, page 76.
To be sick, c. 5. r. 47.
To, before Substantives, c. 1. r. 19.
 — before Pronouns and proper Names, c. 1. r. 22.
 — before Kingdoms, and the word *Town*, c. 1. r. 21.
 — before an Infinitive *di*, c. 4. r. 16.
 — before an Infinitive *a* or *da*, c. 4. r. 17. 1
 — before an Infinitive *per*, c. 4. r. 18.
To thank, c. 1. r. 13.
That, c. 3. r. 17.
That, between Verbs c. 3. r. 8.
That, alone, *ibid.*
 — turned by *who, whom, ibid.*
This, that, before Nouns, c. 3. r. 8.

This

262 *An* INDEX to the RULES.

- This, that*, in comparison, c. 3. r. 9, 10.
This, that, not in comparison c. 3. r. 11.
That whom, which, c. 3. r. 7.
They, c. 3. r. 13.
They not, *ibid.*
They us of it, *they* you of it, &c. *ibid.* and page 79.
They are, c. 4. r. 6.
They, whom, c. 3. r. 11. note.
There, before Verbs, c. 5. r. 57.
Than, in comparison, c. 5. r. 54.
 —after a Comparative, &c. c. 5. r. 55.
Thereabout, c. 5. r. 26.
This, before time of the day, c. 3. r. 8.
This day sen'night, &c. c. 5. r. 33.
Till, untill, c. 5. r. 59.
Time, c. 5. r. 12.
 Verb and Noun turned by a Verb only, c. 1. r. 14.
Vi us, c. 3. r. 14.
Very, very much, c. 5. r. 31.
 Verbs taken Substantively, c. 5. r. 37.
Venire used for *Essere*, c. 3. r. 13. note.
With, with the, with my with *his*, &c. c. 1. r. 11.
With me, with you, with him, with us, with them, &c. *ibid.*
Within, c. 5. r. 28.
Within the, c. 1. r. 20.
What, which, c. 3. r. 7.
What, c. 3. r. 17.
 —not in a question, c. 5. r. 35.
 —Note of Admiration, c. 5. r. 60.
Who, or that, c. 3. r. 12.
Whose, c. 3. r. 15.
Will, c. 5. r. 58.
Whereabout, c. 5. r. 26.



F I N I S.

* * Mr. CHENEAU'S Rules for the FRENCH-TONGUE are printed also for J. POTE, J. HODGES, J. and J. RIVINGTON.





